# Triangulation of the Amplituhedron from Sign Flips 

Ryota Kojima

Department of Particle and Nuclear Physics


#### Abstract

One of the most fundamental and important physical observables in any QFT is the scattering amplitude, which describes the scattering processes of elementary particles. Recently there is much theoretical progress in understanding and computing scattering amplitudes and these lead the discovery of new mathematical structures "Positive geometry".

Many of the recent developments have been driven from the $\mathcal{N}=4$ Super-Yang-Mills theory (SYM) in the planar limit. The first and exciting example of the positive geometry is the amplituhedron, which is obtained from the planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$. The amplituhedron is a purely geometric object which defines the scattering amplitude in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. It is conjectured that the scattering amplitude (loop integrand) of planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$ at any loop order is given by a "canonical form" on the amplituhedron which has logarithmic singularities on all of its boundaries.

To date there is one completely general and in principle straightforward way to obtain the canonical form: by triangulating the amplituhedron into elementary cells for which the canonical form is easy to compute, and subsequently summing the individual pieces. However, it is difficult to triangulate general amplituhedron because of its non-trivial structure. From this, obtaining a systematic way to triangulate the general amplituhedron is an open problem.

In this thesis, we investigate a systematic way to triangulate the general amplituhedron. Once we triangulate the amplituhedron, we can obtain the canonical form. Recently the topological definition of the amplituhedron "sign flip definition" is proposed. We find that by using this topological definition, we can triangulate 2-loop MHV amplituhedron and obtain the canonical form. We also find that this definition makes it possible to triangulate 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron and reveals new representations of the 1-loop NMHV integrand that we have never known from the planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$


## Contents

1 Scattering amplitudes in planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathbf{S Y M}$ ..... 8
1.1 Basic notions for scattering amplitudes ..... 8
1.1.1 Color decomposition ..... 9
1.1.2 Spinor helicity variable ..... 10
1.1.3 Recursion relation for tree amplitudes ..... 12
$1.2 \mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$ ..... 14
1.2.1 $\mathcal{N}=4$ supermultiplets ..... 14
1.2.2 Super-amplitudes in $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM ..... 16
1.2.3 Momentum twistor ..... 17
1.2.4 BCFW recursion relation for $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM ..... 19
1.2.5 BCFW for loop integrands in planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$ ..... 21
1.3 Polytope picture for NMHV amplitudes ..... 22
1.3.1 Volume of a $n$-simplex ..... 22
1.3.2 NMHV tree amplitudes ..... 24
2 The Amplituhedron ..... 26
2.1 Definition of the amplituhedron ..... 26
2.1.1 Generalization of the convex polygon ..... 26
2.1.2 Sign flip definition ..... 30
2.2 Canonical form and scattering amplitudes ..... 31
2.3 Sign flip triangulation ..... 32
3 The 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron ..... 35
3.1 Triangulation of 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron ..... 35
3.1.1 Four point case ..... 35
3.1.2 Five point case ..... 39
3.1.3 n-point case ..... 41
3.2 More 2-loop Objects ..... 43
3.2.1 Log of the 2-loop MHV Amplitude ..... 43
3.2.2 Square of the Amplituhedron and Positivity ..... 47
4 The 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron ..... 50
4.1 6-2 Representation of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron ..... 50
4.1.1 Amplituhedron as a Product of $m=2$ Amplituhedra ..... 50
4.1.2 Five point case ..... 53
4.1.3 Six point case ..... 55
4.1.4 n-point case ..... 57
4.2 Super-Local Form and Positivity ..... 59
5 Conclusion ..... 62
A Explicit Calculation of the 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron ..... 64
A. 1 5-point case ..... 64
A. 2 n-point case ..... 73
A. 3 n-point 2-loop MHV Log Amplituhedron ..... 78
B Explicit Calculation of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron ..... 81
B. 1 6-2 Representation of the 6-pt case ..... 81
C Explicit Results of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron ..... 86
C. 1 Canonical form of the 6 -pt case ..... 86
C. 2 Super-Local Representation of the 6 -pt case ..... 87

## Introduction

The traditional formulation of quantum field theory (QFT) is constructed from the two principles: Locality and Unitarity [1]. The standard calculations of the scattering amplitudes from lagrangians or path integrals make these two principles manifest. However, because of this, a large amount of unphysical redundancies (field redefinitions, gauge redundancies) are introduced.

In 1985, Park and Taylor discovered a surprisingly simple result for the tree scattering amplitude of six gluons by using the spinor-helicity variables [2]. In the original Feynman diagram calculation, there are 220 Feynman diagrams and 100 pages of the calculation are needed. They also generalized this for $n$ gluons tree amplitude and this result showed the same simplicity [3]. This is totally hidden in the original Feynman diagram calculation. This means that the original formalism of QFT is completely hiding some properties of the physical observables we have never known. To reveal these hidden properties, new alternative methods for calculations both tree-level and loop amplitudes are proposed. In 2005 Britto, Cachazo, Feng, and Witten found new on-shell recursion relations (BCFW) for tree-level amplitudes of gluons [4], [5]. These recursion relations are derived from the contour integrations on the complex momentum and the factorization property which comes from the unitarity.

Recently many developments have been driven in the planar limit of the $\mathcal{N}=4$ Super Yang-Mills (SYM). It has been known that this theory has super conformal symmetry. In 2008, the hidden symmetry "Dual super conformal symmetry" is discovered [6], which is not manifest in the ordinal formulation and had not been found for long years. Combining these two symmetries, the infinite symmetry "Yangian symmetry" is constructed [7]. The discovery of these hidden symmetries motivated to find new alternative representations that make all symmetries manifest. In 2009, the new variable "Momentum twistor variable" is proposed by Hodges [8]. When scattering amplitudes are written in this variable, all symmetries become manifest. In 2010, the BCFW recursion relations are generalized into the integrand of loop amplitudes in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM by using this momentum twistor space [9]. By using this,
all loop integrands are systematically and efficiently constructed from lower-loop integrands recursively. In this BCFW representation, there are non-local spurious poles that have never appeared in the ordinal Feynman diagrams expansion. Instead of these spurious poles, this representation makes all symmetries of the amplitude manifest term-by-term, including the Yangian symmetry which is hidden in the original formulation.

The important progress is the discovery of the geometric structure of the scattering amplitudes. The first example of this geometric picture is found by Hodges [8]. He found that the tree NMHV amplitude in this momentum twistor variable can be interpreted as a volume of a polytope and the BCFW recursion relation for the tree NMHV amplitude is interpreted as a triangulation of this polytope. In 2012, the connection between on-shell scattering amplitudes in planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$ and the fundamental object in algebraic geometry "Positive Grassmannian $G_{+}(k, n)$ " is found [10]. In 2013, Arkani-Hamed and Trnka generalized these geometric pictures and found a completely new geometric object: Amplituhedron [11]. This is defined as a generalization of the positive Grassmannian, this means that in the definition of the amplituhedron is purely geometric. It is conjectured that the scattering amplitude (loop integrand) of planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM at any loop order is given by a "canonical form" on the amplituhedron which has logarithmic singularities on all of its boundaries. The BCFW recursion relation of all loop integrands is interpreted as one of the triangulation of the amplituhedron. The remarkable point is that Unitarity and Locality of the scattering amplitudes are derived from the "positivity", which is a property of the amplituhedron. This is the first example of the connection between the physical observable and new geometric structure "positive geometry" [12]. Recently many example of this relation are found: the wavefunction of the universe and the cosmological polytope [13], tree amplitudes in the bi-adjoint $\phi^{3}$ scalar theory [14] and its generalization [15-18] and the conformal bootstrap and the cyclic polytope [19].

The amplituhedron has been explored from a variety of perspectives in the past few years [20-28]. The amplituhedron gives a geometric picture for tree amplitudes and loop integrands as a canonical form of the amplituhedron. Calculating amplitudes or loop integrands starting from the amplituhedron requires the construction of the canonical form associated to the geometry. To do this, we need to triangulate the amplituhedron into a more simple one that it is easy to obtain the form. However, already at tree level and much more at loop level, the geometry of the amplituhedron is highly non-trivial and because of this, it is difficult to triangulate general amplituhedron and it remains an open problem.

We focus on this problem and investigate the triangulation of the general amplituhedron
by using the topological definition of the amplituhedron. Recently the topological definition of the amplituhedron is proposed [29]. In this definition, the amplituhedron is defined from the boundary inequalities and the sign flip characterization. This new definition gives us a completely new and clear understanding of the geometry of the loop amplituhedron. For example, in the MHV case, the higher loop amplituhedron is decomposed into the one loop MHV amplituhedron and conditions of the positivity among the different loop momentum variables. This extremely simple picture of the loop MHV amplituhedron makes it easy to consider the triangulation of the amplituhedron. The topological definition of the $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ loop amplituhedron is more interesting. For example, $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ one loop amplituhedron is constructed as an intersection of the two lower-dimensional amplituhedra. This is not obvious from the original definition. The remarkable point is that we can triangulate the lowerdimensional amplituhedron by using this topological definition [12,29]. These will lead us to a triangulation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.

In this thesis, we investigate the triangulation of the loop amplituhedron. First, we consider the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron. We see that the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron can be triangulated by using the topological definition. From this, we obtain the canonical form of the n-point 2-loop MHV amplituhedron. The representation of the 2-loop MHV integrand from this canonical form looks completely different from the BCFW representation which obtained from the planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$. This is a new feature that starts from the 2-loop level, the 1-loop MHV case the canonical form obtained from the geometry is corresponding to the BCFW representation.

Next, we consider the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron. We obtain an explicit representation of the $n$-point 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron as a product of two lower-dimensional amplituhedra by using the topological definition. This is a completely new representation that we have never known from the planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM or BCFW triangulation. From this, we triangulate this 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron explicitly and obtain the canonical form. We see that this canonical form is expressed as a product of two canonical forms of the lower-dimensional amplituhedra. We will also give another new representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron, "super-local representation". The super-local means both of external poles and internal poles are local. In this representation, the positivity of this form is manifest term-by-term. The positivity of the canonical form is related to the existence of a "dual amplituhedron". This positivity suggests the existence of a dual amplituhedron for the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.

This thesis is organized as follows. In section 1, we briefly review the basic notions of
scattering amplitudes and the BCFW recursion relation. In section 2, we introduce the main object in this thesis: the amplituhedron. First, we review two definitions of the amplituhedron: a generalization of the convex polygon and the topological definition. Then we introduce the canonical form and see how to extract scattering amplitudes from this form. In section 3, we give an explicit triangulation of the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron by using the topological definition. And we introduce another geometric object: 2-loop log amplituhedron, whose canonical form is corresponding to the log of the 2-loop MHV integrand. In section 4, we give an explicit expression of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron as the product of the lower-dimensional amplituhedron and then we construct the canonical form of this representation by using the "sign flip triangulation". From this expression, we obtain a new representation "super-local representation" for the 1-loop NMHV integrand.

## Chapter 1

## Scattering amplitudes in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM

In this thesis, we focus on scattering amplitudes in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. In section 1.1, we briefly review the basic notions for scattering amplitudes. In section 1.2 , we review the tree amplitudes and loop integrands in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. And we apply the BCFW recursion relation for loop integrands. In section 1.3, we review the polytope picture of the tree amplitude in planar $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$ introduced by Hodges.

### 1.1 Basic notions for scattering amplitudes

The scattering amplitude $A$ is defined as an inner product of two asymptotic states, the initial state and the final state:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.A=\langle\text { out } ; t=+\infty| \text { in; } t=-\infty\rangle_{S}=\langle\text { out }| S \mid \text { in }\right\rangle_{H}, \tag{1.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\langle\ldots\rangle_{S}$ means the Schrödinger picture and $\langle\ldots\rangle_{H}$ means the Heisenberg picture. The operator $S$ in the Heisenberg picture is called S-matrix. In the traditional formulation of the quantum field theory, we can calculate this scattering amplitude $A$ from the Lagrangian by using Feynman diagrams expansion. Once we obtain the amplitude, we can calculate the differential cross-section $\frac{d \sigma}{d \Omega} \sim|A|^{2}$. Finally the cross-section $\sigma$ can be obtained by integration of $\frac{d \sigma}{d \Omega}$ over angles and multiply appropriate symmetry factors. These quantities $\sigma$ and $\frac{d \sigma}{d \Omega}$ are the observables of the particle physics experiments. However, it is clear that the on-shell scattering amplitude $A$ is the building block of these observables. These on-shell amplitudes
$A$ are the subject of this thesis.

### 1.1.1 Color decomposition

Here we introduce the color decomposition of the amplitude. Generally, scattering amplitudes in (s)YM have kinematic degrees of freedom and color degrees of freedom. Here we see that these two degrees of freedoms can be decomposed not only tree level but also loop level amplitudes in the large $N$ limit. The color dependence of scattering amplitudes arises from contractions of the structure constants of $S U(N)$. First, we normalize the generators as $\operatorname{Tr}\left(T^{a} T^{b}\right)=\delta^{a b}$ and $\left[T^{a}, T^{b}\right]=i \tilde{f}^{a b c} T^{c}$. It can be shown that

$$
\begin{equation*}
i \tilde{f}^{a b c}=\operatorname{Tr}\left(T^{a} T^{b} T^{c}\right)-\operatorname{Tr}\left(T^{b} T^{a} T^{c}\right) \tag{1.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

And there is $S U(N)$ Fierz identity:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(T^{a}\right)_{i}^{j}\left(T^{a}\right)_{k}^{l}=\delta_{i}^{l} \delta_{k}^{j}-\frac{1}{N} \delta_{i}^{j} \delta_{k}^{l} \tag{1.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

From these relations, the color contributions can be written as products of traces of generator. Any $n$-point tree amplitude involving any particles that transform in the adjoint of the gauge group becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{\text {full,tree }}\left(\left\{p_{i}, h_{i}, a_{i}\right\}\right)=g^{n-2} \sum_{\text {perm } \sigma} A_{n}\left[1^{h_{1}} \sigma\left(2^{h_{2}} \cdots n^{h_{n}}\right)\right] \operatorname{Tr}\left(T^{a_{1}} T^{\sigma\left(a_{2}\right.} \cdots T^{\left.a_{n}\right)}\right) \tag{1.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where each particle is labeled by its on-shell momentum $p_{i}$, helicity $h_{i}$ and color index $a_{i}$. This is called "color-decomposition" and $A_{n}$ is the partial amplitude. In this tree case, there are only single trace structures. For loop amplitudes, there are multi trace structures in addition to the simple single trace. However, there exists a limit of gauge theory in which only single trace structures appear at every loop level. This is called the "large $N$ limit". The $l$-loop amplitude in $N \rightarrow \infty$ is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{\text {full }, l-\text { loop }}\left(\left\{p_{i}, h_{i}, a_{i}\right\}\right)=g^{n-2}\left(g^{2} N\right)^{l} \sum_{\text {perm } \sigma} A_{n}^{l-\text {-loop }}\left[1^{h_{1}} \sigma\left(2^{h_{2}} \cdots n^{h_{n}}\right)\right] \operatorname{Tr}\left(T^{a_{1}} T^{\sigma\left(a_{2}\right.} \cdots T^{\left.a_{n}\right)}\right) \tag{1.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this thesis, we usually focus on this limit and consider partial amplitudes.

### 1.1.2 Spinor helicity variable

When we consider scattering amplitudes, we need to impose on-shell conditions by hand. To make this condition manifest, the "spinor-helicity variable" is introduced. First, we provide a two-dimensional matrix representation of the four-momentum as

$$
\begin{equation*}
p^{\dot{a} a}=p^{\mu}\left(\bar{\sigma}_{\mu}\right)^{\dot{a} a}=p_{\mu}\left(\bar{\sigma}^{\mu}\right)^{\dot{a} a} \tag{1.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(\bar{\sigma}_{\mu}\right)^{\dot{a} a}=\left(1, \sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2}, \sigma_{3}\right)^{\dot{a} a}$. These spinor indices are raised and lowered by the $\epsilon_{a b}, \epsilon_{\dot{a} \dot{b}}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{\dot{a} a}=\epsilon_{a b} \epsilon_{\dot{a} \dot{b}}\left(\bar{\sigma}_{\mu}\right)^{\dot{b} b} p^{\mu}=\left(\bar{\sigma}_{\mu}\right)_{\dot{a} a} p^{\mu} . \tag{1.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

If a $2 \times 2$ matrix has vanishing determinant, it can be written as a product of two 2 -component vectors: $\lambda_{a}, \tilde{\lambda}_{\dot{a}}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
p^{\dot{a} a}=\tilde{\lambda}^{\dot{a}} \lambda^{a}, \quad p_{a \dot{a}}=\lambda_{a} \tilde{\lambda}_{\dot{a}} . \tag{1.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

This $\lambda_{a}$, $\tilde{\lambda}_{\dot{a}}$ are called "spinor-helicity variables". Even if the four-momentum $p^{\mu}$ is constrained by the on-shell condition, these spinor-helicity variables are unconstrained variables. Here we introduce a shorthand notation "angle, square representation",

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\lambda_{i a} \rightarrow|i\rangle_{a}, \quad \lambda_{i}^{a} \rightarrow\left\langle\left. i\right|^{a}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}_{i}^{\dot{a}} \rightarrow\right| i\right]^{\dot{a}}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}_{i \dot{a}} \rightarrow\left[\left.i\right|_{\dot{a}} .\right. \tag{1.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this thesis, we will use this notation.
The Lorentz invariants which made from these variables are expressed as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{a b} \lambda_{i}^{a} \lambda_{j}^{b}=\lambda_{i}^{a} \lambda_{j a}=\langle i j\rangle, \quad \epsilon_{\dot{a} \dot{b}} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}^{\dot{b}} \tilde{\lambda}_{j}^{\dot{a}}=\tilde{\lambda}_{i a} \tilde{\lambda}_{j}^{\dot{a}}=[i j] . \tag{1.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Scattering amplitudes are constructed from the Lorentz invariants. The momentum conservation can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}=0 \rightarrow \sum_{i=1}^{n} \lambda_{i} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}=0 \rightarrow \sum_{i=1}^{n}\langle a i\rangle[i b]=0 \tag{1.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

here we take contractions with arbitrary $\lambda_{a}$ and $\tilde{\lambda}_{b}$. We can see that relations (1.1.8) are invariant under any phase transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{a} \rightarrow e^{i \phi} \lambda^{a}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}^{\dot{a}} \rightarrow e^{-i \phi} \tilde{\lambda}^{\dot{a}} . \tag{1.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can identify this $U(1)$ transformation as the little group transformation of the mass-
less particle. Then this $U(1)$ transformation is called "little group scaling". The standard convention is that the spinors $\lambda$ and $\tilde{\lambda}$ carry helicities $-1 / 2$ and $+1 / 2$, respectively. For complex momenta, the angle and square spinors are independent, then the little group scaling is extended to any non-zero complex number $t$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{a} \rightarrow t \lambda^{a}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}^{\dot{a}} \rightarrow t^{-1} \tilde{\lambda}^{\dot{a}} . \tag{1.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

When we consider scattering amplitudes for spin-1 massless particles, we need to introduce polarization vectors $\epsilon_{ \pm}\left(p_{i}\right)$ for each particle. These vectors satisfy some conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{ \pm}(p) \cdot p=0, \quad \epsilon_{ \pm}(p) \cdot\left(\epsilon_{ \pm}(p)\right)^{*}=-1, \quad \epsilon_{ \pm}(p) \cdot\left(\epsilon_{\mp}(p)\right)^{*}=0 . \tag{1.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can write these polarization vectors in spinor-helicity variables as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{-}^{\mu}(p ; q)=-\frac{\left.\langle p| \gamma^{\mu} \mid q\right]}{\sqrt{2}[q p]}, \quad \epsilon_{+}^{\mu}(p ; q)=-\frac{\left.\langle q| \gamma^{\mu} \mid p\right]}{\sqrt{2}\langle q p\rangle} \tag{1.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma$ is Gamma-matrix and $q$ is an arbitrary reference spinor. The arbitrariness in the choice of reference spinor reflects gauge invariance $\epsilon_{ \pm}^{\mu}(p) \rightarrow \epsilon_{ \pm}^{\mu}(p)+C p_{\mu}$ This does not change the on-shell amplitude $A_{n}$. When summing over all diagrams, the final result is independent of the choices of the reference spinor $q$.

Next, we see some examples of the gluon scattering amplitudes in this spinor-helicity variable. It can be shown that both tree gluon amplitudes with all-plus (or all minus) helicity and with only one particle has different helicity vanish [30]:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{\text {tree }}\left(1^{ \pm}, 2^{ \pm}, \ldots, n^{ \pm}\right)=0, \quad A_{n}^{\text {tree }}\left(1^{\mp}, 2^{ \pm}, \ldots, n^{ \pm}\right)=0 \tag{1.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that (1.1.16) holds for $n \geq 4$ case. The three-point amplitudes are exceptional: $A_{n}^{\text {tree }}\left(i^{-}, j^{\mp}, k^{+}\right) \neq 0$. From (1.1.16) we can see the first non-zero helicity amplitudes are those involving two negative helicity gluons. These amplitudes are called maximally helicity violating (MHV) amplitudes. The MHV n-point gluon amplitude in the spinor-helicity variables is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{\text {tree }}\left(1^{+}, \ldots, i^{-}, \ldots, j^{-}, \ldots, n^{+}\right)=\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}\right) \frac{\langle i j\rangle^{4}}{\langle 12\rangle\langle 23\rangle \cdots\langle n 1\rangle} \tag{1.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is known as Parke-Taylor formula [3]. The amplitudes involving three negative-helicity gluons are called next-to-MHV (NMHV). In general we denote with $\mathrm{N}^{k}$ MHV amplitude which
have $k+2$ negative-helicity gluons and $n-k-2$ positive-helicity gluons. When an amplitude has $n-2$ negative helicity gluons and 2 of positive helicity, it is called anti-MHV.

### 1.1.3 Recursion relation for tree amplitudes

Here we consider the analytically continuing the momentum of scattering amplitudes into the complex plane. The important point is that three-point on-shell amplitudes vanish when the momentum is real. From the momentum conservation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{1} \cdot p_{2}=\frac{1}{2}\left(p_{1}+p_{2}\right)^{2}=0, \quad p_{1} \cdot p_{3}=p_{2} \cdot p_{3}=0 \tag{1.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

In spinor helicity variables, these relations become

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle 12\rangle[21]=\langle 13\rangle[31]=\langle 23\rangle[32]=0 . \tag{1.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Spinor helicity variables associated with real momenta are not independent, then all brackets vanish. This means that we can not write down a non-zero expression for a three-point amplitude. However, if the momenta are complex, spinor helicity variables $\lambda, \tilde{\lambda}$ are independent and $\langle a b\rangle[b a]=0$ implies that one of the brackets is zero. If $[12]=0$, from the momentum conservation, other brackets vanish $[23],[31]=0$. Similarly, when $\langle 12\rangle=0$, other angle brackets equal to zero. These two conditions mean that a three-point amplitude depends on only square brackets or angle brackets. Then, from the little group scaling and some dimensional analysis, the three-point MHV and anti-MHV gluon amplitudes are completely fixed up to an overall constant:

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{3}^{\mathrm{MHV}}\left(1^{-}, 2^{-}, 3^{+}\right)=\frac{\langle 12\rangle^{4}}{\langle 12\rangle\langle 23\rangle\langle 31\rangle}, \quad A_{3}^{\mathrm{anti-MHV}}\left(1^{+}, 2^{+}, 3^{-}\right)=-\frac{[12]^{4}}{[12][23][31]} \tag{1.1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can use these three-point amplitudes as elementary blocks to construct a recursion relation for higher-point tree on-shell amplitudes.

The idea of the on-shell recursion relation is to complexify the momenta of the external particles and use the complex analysis. First we introduce complex vectors $r_{i}^{\mu}, i=1, \cdots, n$ such that

1. $\sum_{i=1}^{n} r_{i}^{\mu}=0$,
2. $r_{i} \cdot r_{j}=0$ fot all $i, j=1,2, \ldots, n$,
3. $p_{i} \cdot r_{i}=0$ for each i.

And we define $n$ shifted momenta

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{p}_{i}^{\mu} \equiv p_{i}^{\mu}+z r_{i}^{\mu}, \quad z \in \mathbb{C} \tag{1.1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

This shifted momenta satisfy the momentum conservation $\sum_{i=1}^{n} \hat{p}_{i}=0$ and the on-shell condition $\hat{p}_{i}^{2}=0$. When we consider a subset of this shifted momenta $\hat{P}_{I}^{\mu} \equiv \sum_{i \in I} \hat{p}_{i}^{\mu}$, this is linear in $z$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{P}_{I}^{2}=P_{I}^{2}+2 z P_{I} \cdot R_{I}, \tag{1.1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{I}^{\mu} \equiv \sum_{i \in I} p_{i}^{\mu}$ and $R_{I}=\sum_{i \in I} r_{i}$. We write this as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{P}_{I}^{2}=-\frac{P_{I}^{2}}{z_{I}}\left(z-z_{I}\right), \quad z_{I}=-\frac{P_{I}^{2}}{2 P_{i} \cdot R_{i}} . \tag{1.1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\hat{A}_{n}(z)$ be a $n$-point tree amplitude in terms of the shifted momenta $\hat{p}_{i}$. In this tree level case, there are only simple poles at $z_{I}$ which come from the shifted propagators $1 / \hat{P}_{I}^{2}$. By using the Cauchy's theorem, the unshifted amplitude is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}=-\sum_{z_{I}} \operatorname{Res} \frac{\hat{A}_{n}(z)}{z}+B_{n}, \tag{1.1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{n}$ is the residue of the pole at $z=\infty$. At a $z_{I}$ pole, the propagator $1 / \hat{P}_{I}^{2}$ goes on-shell, and the shifted amplitude factorize into two on-shell parts $\hat{A}_{L}, \hat{A}_{R}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Res}_{z=z_{I}} \frac{\hat{A}_{n}(z)}{z}=-\hat{A}_{L}\left(z_{I}\right) \frac{1}{P_{I}^{2}} \hat{A}_{R}\left(z_{I}\right) \tag{1.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each $\hat{A}_{L}, \hat{A}_{R}$ have a fewer number of the external particles than the original amplitude.
The boundary term $B_{n}$ from the pole at infinity has no similar expression in terms of lower-point amplitudes and there is not a systematic way to obtain this term. The systematic calculation of this boundary term has been investigated, for example [31]. Here we will not see the detail of this calculation since this boundary term does not appear in the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM.

The BCFW shift is one of the shifts which discussed above. This shift involves two momenta shift

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda_{i} \rightarrow \lambda_{i}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}_{i} \rightarrow \tilde{\lambda}_{i}+z \tilde{\lambda}_{j} \\
\lambda_{j} \rightarrow \lambda_{j}-z \lambda_{i}, \quad \tilde{\lambda}_{j} \rightarrow \tilde{\lambda}_{j},
\end{gathered}
$$

and no other spinors are shifted. This shift is called $[i, j\rangle$-BCFW shift. Let us consider the $[n, 1\rangle$-BCFW shift. In this choice, only propagators involving $\hat{p}_{1}$ or $\hat{p}_{n}$ have a pole at some $z$. For example, we introduce $P_{i}=p_{1}+\cdots+p_{i-1}$, the shifted propagator $1 / \hat{P}_{i}^{2}$ can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\hat{P}_{i}^{2}}=\frac{1}{\left.P_{i}^{2}-z\langle n| P_{i} \mid 1\right]} \tag{1.1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

and this is singular at $\left.z=z_{P_{i}}=P_{i}^{2} /\langle n| P_{i} \mid 1\right]$. On this pole $z_{P_{i}}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\lim _{z \rightarrow z_{P_{i}}} \frac{\hat{A}_{n}^{\text {tree }}(z)}{z}=-\left.\frac{1}{\left(z-z_{P_{i}}\right)} \sum_{s= \pm} A_{L}\left(\hat{1}, 2, \cdots, i-1,-\hat{P}_{i}^{s}\right)\right|_{z_{P_{i}}}\right) \frac{1}{P_{i}^{2}} A_{R}\left(\hat{P}_{i}^{-s}, i, \cdots, \hat{n}\right) . \tag{1.1.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then from (1.1.24), the amplitude is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}^{\text {tree }}=\left.\sum_{i=3}^{n-1} \sum_{s= \pm} A_{L}\left(\hat{1}, 2, \cdots, i-1,-\hat{P}_{i}^{s}\right)\right|_{z_{P_{i}}} \frac{1}{P_{i}^{2}} A_{R}\left(\hat{P}_{i}^{-s}, i, \cdots, \hat{n}\right) \tag{1.1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the BCFW recursion relation obtained from the $[n, 1\rangle$-BCFW shift.

## $1.2 \mathcal{N}=4$ SYM

In this thesis, we investigate scattering amplitudes in the $\mathcal{N}=4$ super Yang-Mills theory with $S U(N)$ gauge group. This theory describes sixteen states: two gluons, eight fermion states, and six scalars. All of these particles can interact with each other in many different combinations. This means that we can obtain many different amplitudes. In this section, we introduce a super-amplitude which gives a compact and simple description of the amplitudes of all the particles in the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM by using the $\mathcal{N}=4$ supermultiplet of massless states. Then we review the BCFW recursion relation for this super-amplitude and loop integrands in the planar limit.

### 1.2.1 $\mathcal{N}=4$ supermultiplets

Here we see how to obtain the massless representations of the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SUSY algebra and construct the massless supermultiplet. First, the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SUSY algebra is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{q_{a}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{a}}\right\}=\delta_{B}^{A} p_{a \dot{a}} \tag{1.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $A, B=1,2,3,4$ and $q, \bar{q}$ are supersymmetric generators. In the massless case, we can choose the Lorentz frame in which $p \mu=(p, 0,0, p)$, then the relation (1.2.1) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{q_{a}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{a}}\right\}=\delta_{B}^{A}\left(1+\sigma_{3}\right)_{a \dot{a}} p \tag{1.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and this is reduced to the Clifford algebra

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{q_{1}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{1}}\right\}=2 \delta_{B}^{A} p, \quad\left\{q_{1}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{2}}\right\}=0, \quad\left\{q_{2}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{1}}\right\}=0, \quad\left\{q_{2}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{2}}\right\}=0 \tag{1.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The massless states are labeled by their helicity and the eigenvalue of the Lorentz generator $J_{12}$. For chiral spinors, the Lorentz generator $J_{12}$ is $\frac{1}{2}\left(\sigma_{3}\right)_{a}^{b}$ and the helicity is $\left\{q_{1}^{A}, q_{2}^{A}\right\}=$ $\{1 / 2,-1 / 2\}$. For anti-chiral spinors, the Lorentz generator $J_{12}$ is $\frac{1}{2}\left(\bar{\sigma}_{3}\right)_{\dot{a}}^{\dot{b}}$ and the helicity is $\left\{\bar{q}_{A \dot{1}}, \bar{q}_{A \dot{2}}\right\}=\{-1 / 2,1 / 2\}$.

Next, we define a vacuum state $|h\rangle$ which has helicity $h$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{1}^{A}|h\rangle=q_{2}^{A}|h\rangle=q_{A \dot{2}}|h\rangle=0, \quad J_{12}|h\rangle=h|h\rangle . \tag{1.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The massless supermultiplet is obtained by applying the four creation operators $\bar{q}_{A i}$ to $|h\rangle$ :

| State | Helicity | Multiplicity |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\|h\rangle$ | $h$ | 1 |
| $\bar{q}_{A i}\|h\rangle$ | $h-1 / 2$ | 4 |
| $\bar{q}_{A i} \bar{q}_{B i}\|h\rangle$ | $h-1$ | 6 |
| $\epsilon^{A B C D} \bar{q}_{A i} \bar{q}_{B \mathrm{i}} \bar{q}_{C \mathrm{i}}\|h\rangle$ | $h-3 / 2$ | 4 |
| $\epsilon^{A B C D} \bar{q}_{A \mathrm{i}} \bar{q}_{B \mathrm{i}} \bar{q}_{C \mathrm{i}} \bar{q}_{D \mathrm{i}}\|h\rangle$ | $h-2$ | 1 |

By choosing $h=1$, we can obtain the CPT self-conjugate supermultiplet which describing massless particles of helicities $\pm 1, \pm 1 / 2,0$. We write these states as

$$
\begin{equation*}
h= \pm 1:\left|G^{ \pm}\right\rangle, h=\frac{1}{2}:\left|\Gamma_{A}\right\rangle, h=-\frac{1}{2}:\left|\bar{\Gamma}^{A}\right\rangle, h=0:\left|S_{A B}\right\rangle \tag{1.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the previous section, we used a special frame, then the Lorentz invariance is broken. Here we construct the supermultiplet in a manifestly Lorentz covariant way and introduce a super-state. First, we rewrite the SUSY algebra (1.2.1) by using the spinor-helicity variables:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{q_{a}^{A}, \bar{q}_{B \dot{a}}\right\}=\delta_{B}^{A}|p\rangle_{a}\left[\left.p\right|_{\dot{a}} \rightarrow\left\{q^{A}, \bar{q}_{B}\right\}=\delta_{B}^{A}\right. \tag{1.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we define $q^{A}, \bar{q}_{B}$ as $q_{a}^{A}=|p\rangle_{a} q^{A}$ and $\bar{q}_{B \dot{a}}=\left[\left.p\right|_{\dot{a}} \bar{q}_{B}\right.$. This is the Lorentz covariant
projection of the $q_{a}^{A}$, and $\bar{q}_{B \dot{a}}$. From this, we can see that $q^{A}, \bar{q}_{A}$ are interpreted as the covariant analogs of the annihilation operator $q_{1}^{A}$ and the creation operator $\bar{q}_{A i}$. There is another Lorentz covariant projection $q^{\prime A}=\left\langle\left. p\right|^{a} q_{a}^{A}\right.$. We can see that the projections $q^{\prime A}, \bar{q}_{A}^{\prime}$ anticommute with each other and with the rest of the generators. From this, we can interpret these as the covariant analogs of the $q_{2}^{A}$ and $\bar{q}_{A \dot{2}}$. It is known that this algebras are realized by using Grassmann variables $\eta^{A}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
q^{A}=\eta^{A}, \quad \bar{q}_{A}=\frac{\partial}{\partial \eta^{A}} . \tag{1.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we define a super-state

$$
\begin{align*}
|\Phi\rangle & =\left|G^{+}\right\rangle+\eta^{A}\left|\Gamma_{A}\right\rangle+\frac{1}{2} \eta^{A} \eta^{B}\left|S_{A B}\right\rangle+\frac{1}{3!} \eta^{A} \eta^{B} \eta^{C} \epsilon_{A B C D}\left|\bar{\Gamma}^{D}\right\rangle  \tag{1.2.8}\\
& +\frac{1}{4!} \eta^{A} \eta^{B} \eta^{C} \eta^{D} \epsilon_{A B C D}\left|G^{-}\right\rangle .
\end{align*}
$$

We can obtain the states of the multiplet by using the generators (1.2.7). For example, the state with $h=1$ is obtained as $\left.|\Phi\rangle\right|_{\eta=0}=\left|G^{+}\right\rangle$. The next state is obtained by applying the creation operator $\bar{q}_{A}:\left.\bar{q}_{A}|\Phi\rangle\right|_{\eta=0}=\left|\Gamma_{A}\right\rangle$.

### 1.2.2 Super-amplitudes in $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM

Next, we introduce a superamplitude $\mathcal{A}_{n}\left(\Phi_{1}, \cdots, \Phi_{n}\right)$ which gives a compact representation of the scattering amplitudes of all the particles in the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. First we define a superfield $\Phi$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
\Phi(p, \eta) & =G^{+}(p)+\eta^{A} \Gamma_{A}(p)+\frac{1}{2} \eta^{A} \eta^{B} S_{A B}(p)+\frac{1}{3!} \eta^{A} \eta^{B} \eta^{C} \epsilon_{A B C D} \bar{\Gamma}^{D}(p) \\
& +\frac{1}{4!} \eta^{A} \eta^{B} \eta^{C} \eta^{D} \epsilon_{A B C D} G^{-}(p) . \tag{1.2.9}
\end{align*}
$$

The fields appearing in this superfield have to be thought as annihilation operators. These operators produce the exciting states when acting on the vacuum $\langle 0|$. Then a superamplitude $\mathcal{A}_{n}\left(\Phi_{1}, \cdots, \Phi_{n}\right)$ is defined as the $S$-matrix between the vacuum $|0\rangle$ and $n$ outgoing states which are created by the superfields $\Phi_{i}$. It depends on the on-shell momentum $p_{i}$ and Grassmann variables $\eta_{i A}$ for each particle $i=1, \cdots, n$. First, we consider the supersymmetry generator

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{a}^{A}=\sum_{i=1}^{n} q_{i a}^{A}=\sum_{i=1}^{n}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A} . \tag{1.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

The supersymmetry invariance for the vacuum requires that this generator annihilate the superamplitude $q_{a}^{A} \mathcal{A}_{n}=0$. Then we can deduce the superamplitude as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}=\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}\right) \delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A}\right) \mathcal{P}_{n}(\lambda, \tilde{\lambda}, \eta), \tag{1.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A}\right)=\prod_{a=1,2} \prod_{A=1}^{4}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A}$ is a Grassmann delta function and $\mathcal{P}_{n}$ is a polynomial in Grassmann variables $\eta_{i}^{A}$. We can obtain any amplitude from this superamplitude by using Grassmann differential. For example,

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{n}\left(\left|G_{1}^{+}\right\rangle \ldots\left|G_{i}^{-}\right\rangle \ldots\left|G_{j}^{-}\right\rangle \ldots\left|G_{n}^{+}\right\rangle\right)=\left.\left(\prod_{A=1}^{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta_{i A}}\right)\left(\prod_{B=1}^{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta_{j B}}\right) \mathcal{A}_{n}\left(\left|\Phi_{1}\right\rangle, \ldots,|\Phi\rangle_{n}\right)\right|_{\eta_{k C}=0} \tag{1.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since there is $S U(4)$ R-symmetry, the superamplitude is expanded to a sum of degree $4(K+2)$ polynomials in $\eta_{i A}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}=\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}\right) \delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A}\right)\left[\mathcal{P}_{n}^{(0)}+\mathcal{P}_{n}^{(4)}+\mathcal{P}_{n}^{(8)}+\cdots+\mathcal{P}_{n}^{(4 n-16)}\right], \tag{1.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

We call the order $K$ of the Grassmann polynomial as $\mathrm{N}^{K} \mathrm{MHV}$ sector. Then the superamplitude can be expanded as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}=\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{MHV}}+\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{NMHV}}+\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{N}^{2} \mathrm{MHV}}+\cdots+\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\text {anti-MHV }} \tag{1.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we call the order $n-4$ of the Grassmann polynomial as anti-MHV sector.

### 1.2.3 Momentum twistor

We have seen that the on-shell condition is manifestly resolved by using the spinor-helicity variables. There is another condition: the momentum conservation. In the previous section, we saw that the superamplitudes have two delta functions: $\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}\right)$ and $\delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n}|i\rangle_{a} \eta_{i}^{A}\right)$. Here we introduce new dual variables $y_{i}, \theta_{i}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{i}^{\dot{a} a}-y_{i+1}^{\dot{a} a}=p_{i}^{\dot{a} a}, \quad\left|\theta_{i A}\right\rangle-\left|\theta_{i+1, A}\right\rangle=q_{i A}^{\dagger}=|i\rangle \eta_{i A} . \tag{1.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

The momentum conservation $\sum_{i=1}^{n} p_{i}=0$ and the super momentum conservation $\sum_{i=1}^{n} q_{i A}^{\dagger}=$ 0 correspond to the periodicity condition that $y_{n+1}=y_{1},\left|\theta_{n+1, A}\right\rangle=\left|\theta_{1, A}\right\rangle$. By using this dual variable, the momentum conservation is manifest, however, the on-shell condition ( $y_{i}-$
$\left.y_{i+1}\right)^{2}=0$ is not manifest. We can expect that by combining these two variables: the spinorhelicity variable and the dual variable, we can construct a new variable that makes these two conditions manifest. Before constructing this variable, we see the relation of this dual variable and the hidden symmetry.

These dual variables make it possible to exhibit a hidden symmetry "dual conformal symmetry". First observation of this symmetry was given in the calculation of the four-gluon MHV amplitude [32], [33]. Additional evidence was obtained both at weak coupling [34], [35], [36] and at strong coupling [37], [38]. Then in it was proven that all scattering amplitudes in $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM are dual superconformal invariants [6].

Next, we introduce a new variable "Momentum twistor variable". By using this dual variables, we introduce another variable $\left[\mu_{i}\right]^{a}, \chi_{i}^{A}$ defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\left. i\right|_{\dot{a}} y_{i}^{\dot{a} a}=\left.\langle i|\right|_{\dot{a}} y_{i+1}^{\dot{a} a} \equiv\left[\left.\mu\right|_{i} ^{a}, \quad \chi_{i}^{A}=\left\langle i \theta_{i A}\right\rangle=\left\langle i \theta_{i+1, A}\right\rangle\right.\right. \tag{1.2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We write the new four-component spinor which made from a pair of spinors $\left[\left.\mu_{i}\right|^{a}\right.$ and $|i\rangle^{\dot{a}}$ as $Z_{i}^{I} \equiv\left(|i\rangle^{\dot{a}},\left[\left.\mu_{i}\right|^{a}\right)\right.$ with $I=(\dot{a}, a)$. These $Z_{i}^{I}$ are called "momentum twistors". When the fermionic $\chi_{i}^{A}$ is included, this is called "momentum supertwistor" $\mathcal{Z}_{i}^{\mathcal{A}}$ where $\mathcal{A}=(\dot{a}, a, A)$. The important point is that these new variables transform linearly under the dual conformal transformation. By using this momentum twistor, we can make a dual conformal invariant by contracting four $Z^{I}$ with the Levi-Civita tensor

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle i j k l\rangle \equiv \epsilon_{I J K L} Z_{i}^{I} Z_{j}^{J} Z_{k}^{K} Z_{l}^{L} \tag{1.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

The relation (1.2.16) imply that $\left.\left.\mid \mu_{i}\right] \rightarrow t_{i} \mid \mu_{i}\right]$ under the little group scaling (1.1.13). From this, the momentum twistors transform as $Z_{i}^{I} \rightarrow t_{i} Z_{i}^{I}$. This means that the momentum twistors are defined projectively.

Since the dual variable $y_{i}$ is defined as (1.2.15), a point $Z_{i}^{I}$ is determined by the line of two points $y_{i}^{\mu}$ and $y_{i+1}^{\mu}$. On the other hand, the dual variable is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{i}^{\dot{a} a}=\frac{|i\rangle^{\dot{a}}\left[\left.\mu_{i-1}\right|^{a}-|i-1\rangle^{\dot{a}}\left[\left.\mu_{i}\right|^{a}\right.\right.}{\langle i-1 i\rangle} . \tag{1.2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that a point in this $y$ space is determined by a line $\left(Z_{i-1}^{I} Z_{i}^{I}\right)$ in $Z$ space. Then a point in the dual space maps to a line in the momentum twistor space, and vice versa. This is the reason why this variables $Z_{i}^{I}$ is called momentum twistor variables. If we choose $n$ points $Z_{i}$ in this momentum twistor space, there are $n$ lines defined by consecutive points
$\left(Z_{i}, Z_{i+1}\right)$. From (1.2.18), each line ( $Z_{i}, Z_{i+1}$ ) is mapped to the point in the dual space $y_{i}$ and the relation (1.2.16) requires that the points $y_{i}$ and $y_{i+1}$ are null-separated. This means that the corresponding momenta $p_{i}=y_{i}-y_{i+1}$ are on-shell. Then this momentum twistor variables make both conditions: the on-shell condition and the momentum conservation manifest.

Next, we see the relation between physical poles and this momentum twistor variables. The physical poles are written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\left(p_{i}+p_{i+1}+p_{i+2}+\cdots+p_{j-2}+p_{j-1}\right)^{2}}=\frac{1}{y_{i j}^{2}}, \tag{1.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{i j} \equiv y_{i}-y_{j}=p_{i}+p_{i+1}+\cdots+p_{j-1} . \tag{1.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

In momentum twistor space, this dual variable is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{i j}^{2}=\frac{\langle i-1, i, j-1, j\rangle}{\langle i-1, i\rangle\langle j-1, j\rangle} . \tag{1.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the physical poles $y_{i j}^{2}=0$ mean that $\langle i-1, i, j-1, j\rangle=0$.

### 1.2.4 BCFW recursion relation for $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM

Here we consider the BCFW recursion relation for tree amplitudes in the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. In the super symmetric theory case, we need to generalize the $[i, j\rangle$ BCFW shift to the $[i, j\rangle$ BCFW super-shift

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\lambda}_{i} \rightarrow \tilde{\lambda}_{i}+z \tilde{\lambda}_{j}, \quad \lambda_{j} \rightarrow \lambda_{j}-z \lambda_{i}, \quad \eta_{i} \rightarrow \eta_{i}+z \eta_{j} . \tag{1.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

When we involve the shifts of the Grassmann variables $\eta$, the supermomentum $q=\sum_{i} \lambda_{i} \eta_{i}$ is conserved. From this, this generalization is natural from the point of view of SUSY. Following the same step as non-SUSY BCFW, we can obtain the superamplitude as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{tree}}=\left.\sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \int d^{4} \eta_{\hat{P_{i}}} \mathcal{A}_{L}\left(\hat{1}, 2, \cdots, i-1,-\hat{P}_{i}\right)\right|_{z_{P_{i}}} \frac{1}{P_{i}^{2}} \mathcal{A}_{R}\left(\hat{P_{i}}\right), i, \cdots, n-1 \hat{n}\right)\left.\right|_{z_{P_{i}}} . \tag{1.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

The difference between non-SUSY and SUSY BCFW is the integration over the $\eta$. As in the non-SUSY case, we need to sum over all possible states that can be exchanged on the internal line. In the $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM case, this includes all 16 states. In terms of component amplitudes, the particle on the internal line depends on the external states of the amplitude. First, if all external states are gluon, the internal line is also a gluon and we need to sum over the
helicities as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\left(\prod_{A=1}^{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta_{\hat{P} A}}\right) \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L}\right] \frac{1}{P^{2}} \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R}+\left.\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L} \frac{1}{P^{2}}\left[\left(\prod_{A=1}^{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta_{\hat{P} A}}\right) \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R}\right]\right|_{\eta_{\hat{P} A}=0} \tag{1.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

If a gluino is exchanged, we need to move one of the four Grassmann derivatives from $\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L}$ to $\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R}$ in both the first and second terms. In a scalar exchange case, two Grassmann derivatives act on $\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L}$ and the another two derivatives act on $\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R}$. All of this is summarised by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(\prod_{A=1}^{4} \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta_{\hat{P} A}}\right)\left[\hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L} \frac{1}{P^{2}} \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R}\right]\right|_{\eta_{\hat{P} A}=0}=\int d^{4} \eta_{\hat{P}} \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{L} \frac{1}{P^{2}} \hat{\mathcal{A}}_{R} . \tag{1.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

An important point is that the boundary term is always vanishes in the supersymmetric recursion relation. By using this BCFW recursion relation, it is possible to obtain all tree amplitudes $\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}}{ }^{[39]}$. The MHV tree superamplitude is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{MHV}}=\frac{\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i} \lambda_{i} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}\right) \delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i} \lambda_{i} \eta_{i}\right)}{\langle 12\rangle\langle 23\rangle \cdots\langle n 1\rangle} . \tag{1.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can prove this by using the BCFW. The NMHV tree superamplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{NMHV}}=\frac{\delta^{4}\left(\sum_{i} \lambda_{i} \tilde{\lambda}_{i}\right) \delta^{0 \mid 8}\left(\sum_{i} \lambda_{i} \eta_{i}\right)}{\langle 12\rangle\langle 23\rangle \cdots\langle n 1\rangle} \sum_{k=j+2}^{n-1} \sum_{j=2}^{n-3} R_{n j k}, \tag{1.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{n i j}$ is called R-invariants which defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{n j k}=\frac{\delta^{(4)}\left(\langle j-1, j, k-1, k\rangle \chi_{n A}+\text { cyclic }\right)}{\langle n, j-1, j, k-1\rangle\langle j-1, j, k-1, k\rangle\langle j, k-1, k, n\rangle\langle k-1, k, n, j-1\rangle\langle k, n, j-1, j\rangle} . \tag{1.2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

The important point is that in this representation, each R-invariant has spurious poles. From the previous section, the physical poles are written as $\langle i-1, i, j-1, j\rangle$, then for example the pole $\langle n, j-1, j, k-1\rangle$ is not physical pole. These spurious poles are canceled in the sum of the R -invariants. This is the important feature of the BCFW. We can rewrite the amplitudes into compact expressions, but the cost is the appearance of spurious poles. This means that in the BCFW representation the locality is not manifest.

### 1.2.5 BCFW for loop integrands in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM

The analytic structure of loop level amplitudes is more complicated than for tree-level amplitudes. The tree-amplitude is a simple rational function and has only single poles. However, the loop-amplitude is expressed as generalized logarithms and special functions and has branch cuts in addition to poles. From this, we focus on the loop integrand: the rational function inside the loop momentum integration. This integrand is a rational function with poles from the propagators.

When we consider the BCFW shift for the loop integrand, there is a problem that does not appear in the tree case. In the loop level amplitude, the loop momenta $l_{i}$ are just integrating variables that we can change these variables which gives the same integrated result. However, if we consider the BCFW shifts for the integrand, this reparametrization gives different functions in $z$. For example, we consider the 1 -loop 4 -point box integrand

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{4}(1,2,3,4)=\frac{1}{l^{2}\left(l-p_{1}\right)^{2}\left(l-p_{1}-p_{2}\right)^{2}\left(l+p_{4}\right)^{2}} . \tag{1.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider the equivalent parametrization $I_{4}^{\prime}=I_{4}\left(l \rightarrow l+p_{1}\right)$ and take the BCFW shift for $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I_{4}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, 3,4)=\frac{1}{l^{2}\left(l-p_{1}-z q\right)^{2}\left(l-p_{1}-p_{2}\right)^{2}\left(l+p_{4}\right)^{2}} \\
& I_{4}^{\prime}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, 3,4)=\frac{1}{\left(l+p_{1}+z q\right)^{2} l^{2}\left(l-p_{2}+z q\right)^{2}\left(l-p_{2}-p_{3}+z q\right)^{2}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

These two integrands are different, then the BCFW recursion relation for the integrands is ill-defined.

However, this problem is resolved in supersymmetric theories in the planar limit. This means that in the planar limit, the loop momenta in the integrand is defined unambiguously. Here we define the dual variable $y_{0}$ for the loop momentum as $l=y_{1}-y_{0}$. This is the same as the relation $p_{i}=y_{i}-y_{i+1}$. When the ordering of the external particles is well-defined based on the color-ordering, this definition has no ambiguity. In the loop level, this requires that all diagrams be planar.

Then we consider the BCFW recursion relation for the planar integrand. Here we use the momentum supertwistor $\mathcal{Z}_{i}^{A}$. The dual variable $y$ is expressed as a line in momentum twistor space. Then we take $y_{0}$ to be mapped to a line $\left(Z_{A} Z_{B}\right)$ in the momentum twistor space. The explicit representation of the BCFW recursion relation for all loop integrands in
planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM is given in [9] as

$$
\begin{aligned}
M_{n, k, l}(1, \cdots, n) & =M_{n-1, k, l}(1, \cdots, n-1) \\
& +\sum_{n_{L}, k_{L}, l_{L} ; j}[j j+1 n-1 n 1] \times M_{n_{R}, k_{R}, l_{R}}^{R}\left(1, \cdots, j, I_{j}\right) \times M_{n_{L}, k_{L}, l_{L}}^{L}\left(I_{j}, j+1, \cdots, \hat{n}_{j}\right) \\
& +\int_{\mathrm{GL}(2)}[A B n-1 n 1] \times M_{n+2, k+1, l-1}\left(1, \cdots, \hat{n}_{A B}, \hat{A}, B\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $n_{L}+n_{R}=n, k_{L}+k_{R}=k, l_{L}+l_{R}=l$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
& {[a, b, c, d, e]=\frac{\delta^{0 \mid 4}\left(\eta_{a}\langle b c d e\rangle+\text { cyclic }\right)}{\langle a b c d\rangle\langle b c d e\rangle\langle c d e a\rangle\langle d e a b\rangle\langle e a b c\rangle}} \\
& \hat{n}_{j}=(n-1 n) \cap(j j+11), \quad I_{j}=(j j+1) \cap(n-1 n 1), \\
& \hat{n}_{A B}=(n-1 n) \cap(A B 1), \quad \hat{A}=(A B) \cap(n-1 n 1) . \tag{1.2.30}
\end{align*}
$$

We can obtain all loop integrands form this BCFW recursion relation. For example, the 1-loop MHV integrand is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{1 \text { l-lop }}(1,2, \cdots, n)=\sum_{i<j} \frac{\langle A B(1 i i+1) \cap(1 j j+1)\rangle}{\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle}, \tag{1.2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

here we omit to write the MHV tree factor.

### 1.3 Polytope picture for NMHV amplitudes

In this section, we review the polytope picture for NMHV tree amplitudes which was introduced by Hodges [8].

### 1.3.1 Volume of a $n$-simplex

First, we start from the simplest example. We consider a triangle in a 2-dimensional space which made from the three vertices $\left(x_{1}, y_{1}\right),\left(x_{2}, y_{2}\right),\left(x_{3}, y_{3}\right)$. The area of this triangle can be written as

$$
V_{2}=\frac{1}{2}\left|\begin{array}{ccc}
x_{1} & x_{2} & x_{3}  \tag{1.3.1}\\
y_{1} & y_{2} & y_{3} \\
1 & 1 & 1
\end{array}\right|
$$



Figure 1.1: Area of a triangle

We define three 3 -vectors and a reference vector as

$$
W_{i I}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
x_{i}  \tag{1.3.2}\\
y_{i} \\
1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathcal{Z}_{0}^{I}=\left(\begin{array}{c}
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right)
$$

By using these 3-vectors, the area can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{2}=\frac{1}{2} \frac{\langle 1,2,3\rangle}{\left(\mathcal{Z}_{0} \cdot W_{1}\right)\left(\mathcal{Z}_{0} \cdot W_{2}\right)\left(\mathcal{Z}_{0} \cdot W_{3}\right)} \tag{1.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we define a dual space $\mathcal{Z}_{a}^{I}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{Z}^{I} W_{I}=0 \tag{1.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

These dual points $\mathcal{Z}_{a}^{I}$ are related to lines in $W$ space. Let us label the three edges of the triangle as $a, b$ and $c$ as Figure 1.1. Then each $W_{i I}$ is characterized by two lines in the dual space. These dual points make a triangle and this is called "dual triangle". By using these dual points, we can calculate the area of the dual triangle. For example, $W_{1 I}$ is the intersection of lines $a$ and $c$, then this $W_{1 I}$ satisfies $\mathcal{Z}_{a}^{I} W_{1 I}=\mathcal{Z}_{c}^{I} W_{1 I}=0$. We can solve these constraints and $W_{1 I}$ is written as $W_{1 I}=\epsilon_{I J K} \mathcal{Z}_{c}^{J} \mathcal{Z}_{a}^{K}$. Then the area of the dual triangle is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{2}=\frac{1}{2} \frac{\langle a, b, c\rangle^{2}}{\langle 0, a, b\rangle\langle 0, b, c\rangle\langle 0, c, a\rangle} \equiv[a, b, c], \tag{1.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\langle a, b, c\rangle \equiv \epsilon_{I J K} \mathcal{Z}_{a}^{I} \mathcal{Z}_{b}^{J} \mathcal{Z}_{c}^{K}$. We can generalize this expression to the volume of "dual" $n$-simplex in $\mathbb{C P}^{n}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\mathcal{Z}_{i_{1}}, \cdots, \mathcal{Z}_{i_{n}+1}\right]=\frac{1}{n!} \frac{\left\langle i_{1}, i_{2}, \ldots, i_{n+1}\right\rangle^{n}}{\left\langle 0, i_{1}, i_{2}, \ldots, i_{n}\right\rangle\left\langle 0, i_{2}, \ldots, i_{n+1}\right\rangle \cdots\left\langle 0, i_{n+1}, i_{1}, \ldots, i_{n-1}\right\rangle} \tag{1.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 1.3.2 NMHV tree amplitudes

In the momentum twistor space, the BCFW representation of the NMHV tree amplitude is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{NMHV}}=\mathcal{A}_{n}^{\mathrm{MHV}} \sum_{k=j+2}^{n-1} \sum_{j=2}^{n-3}[n, j-1, j, k-1, k], \tag{1.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $[n, j-1, j, k-1, k]=R_{n j k}$. Let us define the 5 -component vector

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{Z}_{i}^{\mathcal{I}}=\binom{Z_{i}^{I}}{\chi_{i} \cdot \psi}, \quad \mathcal{I}=1, \cdots, 5, \tag{1.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\chi_{i} \cdot \psi=\chi_{i}^{A} \cdot \psi_{A}$ and $\psi_{A}$ is an $S U(4)$ auxiliary Grassmann variable. This $\psi$ common for all external particles. Then we define $\langle i, j, k, l, m\rangle$ as the contraction of five of these 5 -vectors with a 5 -indexed Levi-Civita tensor. By using this 5 -bracket, the R -invariant can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
[i, j, k, l, m]=\frac{1}{4!} \int d^{4} \psi \frac{\langle i, j, k, l, m\rangle^{4}}{\langle 0, i, j, k, l\rangle\langle 0, j, k, l, m\rangle\langle 0, k, l, m, i\rangle\langle 0, l, m, i, j, k\rangle\langle 0, m, i, j, k\rangle}, \tag{1.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have introduced the auxiliary reference 5 -vector

$$
\mathcal{Z}_{0}^{\mathcal{I}}=\left(\begin{array}{l}
0  \tag{1.3.10}\\
0 \\
0 \\
0 \\
1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Since the integrand is invariant under $\mathcal{Z}_{i}^{\mathcal{I}} \rightarrow t_{i} \mathcal{Z}_{i}^{\mathcal{I}}$, the 5 -vector is projectively and we can interpret this as the coordinates of points in projective space $\mathbb{C P}^{4}$.

From this, we can see that the integrand of the R -invariant (1.3.9) is the volume of a "dual" 4 -simplex in $\mathbb{C P}^{4}$. For example, the five point amplitude is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{5}^{\mathrm{NMHV}}=\mathcal{A}_{5}^{\mathrm{MHV}} \times[1,2,3,4,5] . \tag{1.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, up to the MHV factor $\mathcal{A}_{5}^{\mathrm{MHV}}$, this is the volume of a 4 -simplex in $\mathbb{C P}^{4}$. Next, the BCFW representation of the six point amplitude based on $[2,3\rangle$ super-shift is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mathcal{A}_{6}^{\mathrm{NMHV}}}{\mathcal{A}_{6}^{\mathrm{MHV}}}=[1,2,3,4,5]+[1,2,3,5,6]+[1,3,4,5,6] . \tag{1.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the sum of the volumes of the 4 -simplices. This sum of the volumes corresponds to the volume of the six-vertices dual polytope in $\mathbb{C P}^{4}$. From this, we can interpret this the six-point amplitude as a volume of the six-vertices dual polytope. When we triangulate this polytope into the simplices, then the volume becomes a sum of the volumes of each simplex such as (1.3.12). This means that the BCFW representation is interpreted as a triangulation of the polytope. Of cause, there is another triangulation of this polytope such as $[1,2,3,4,6]+[2,3,4,5,6]+[1,2,4,5,6]$. This triangulation is the BCFW representation of the six-point amplitude based on $[3,2\rangle$ super-shift.

The polytope interpretation described here is valid for NMHV $n$-point tree superamplitudes. This was generalized into the 1 -loop $n$-point MHV integrands in [40].

## Chapter 2

## The Amplituhedron

In the previous section, we see that the BCFW recursion relation gives all loop level integrands in planar $\mathcal{N}=4$ SYM. And the NMHV amplitudes can be interpreted as a volume of a polytope. In 2013, Arkani-Hamed and Trnka generalized these geometric pictures for all loop integrands and found a completely new geometric object: Amplituhedron [11]. In this section, we will explain the definition of the amplituhedron and how to extract scattering amplitudes from this geometric object.

### 2.1 Definition of the amplituhedron

The original definition of the amplituhedron is given as a generalization of a convex polygon to the Grassmannian. This can be interpreted as a generalization of the vertex-centered description of the convex polygon. The second definition is a topological definition of the amplituhedron. This can be interpreted as a generalization of the face-centered description: definition of the polygon by the collection of inequalities associated with the boundaries. We briefly review these two definitions.

### 2.1.1 Generalization of the convex polygon

First we review the original definition of the amplituhedron. Let us start with a triangle in real two dimensional space $\mathbb{R P}^{2}$. Any point in this space is expressed as a linear combination of the vertices $Z_{i}^{I}(I=1,2,3)$ of the triangle,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y^{I}=c_{1} Z_{1}^{I}+c_{2} Z_{2}^{I}+c_{3} Z_{3}^{I} . \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The interior of the triangle is parametrized as all the triplet $\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, c_{3}\right) / \mathrm{GL}(1)$ with all ratios $c_{a} / c_{b}$ are positive, so that all $c_{a}$ are positive or negative. For simplicity, here we take all of the coefficients are positive: $c_{a}>0$.

We can consider two generalizations of this construction. On the one hand, we can interpret this triangle as a 2 -dimensional simplex and go to higher-dimensional simplices in higherdimensional spaces. On the other hand, we can consider polygons in the two-dimensional plane. First, we generalize the triangle to an $(n-1)$ dimensional simplex in general projective space. The interior of this simplex is expressed as a collection $\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, \cdots, c_{n}\right) / \mathrm{GL}(1)$ with $c_{a}>0$. We can further generalize this to the space of $k$-dimensional planes in $n$-dimensional space. This is the Grassmannian $G(k, n)$ which is a collection of $n k$-dimensional vectors,

$$
C=\left(\begin{array}{c}
c_{1}^{1}, c_{2}^{1}, \cdots, c_{n}^{1}  \tag{2.1.2}\\
c_{1}^{2}, c_{2}^{2}, \cdots, c_{n}^{2} \\
\vdots \\
c_{1}^{k}, c_{2}^{k}, \cdots, c_{n}^{k}
\end{array}\right) / \operatorname{GL}(k)=\left(\vec{c}_{1}, \vec{c}_{2}, \cdots, \vec{c}_{n}\right) / \operatorname{GL}(k)
$$

The positivity giving us the interior of a simplex can be generalized to the Grassmannian: all ordered minors of this $C$ are positive,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle c_{a_{1}} \cdots c_{a_{k}}\right\rangle>0 \text { for } a_{1}<\cdots<a_{k} . \tag{2.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Grassmannian which satisfies this positivity is called "Positive Grassmannian $G_{+}(k, n)$ ".
Next, we consider a polygon in the two-dimensional plane with vertices $Z_{1}^{I}, \cdots, Z_{n}^{I}$. There is a well-defined notion of the interior that exists when the polygon is "convex". This convexity for vertices is that all ordered minors of the $3 \times n$ matrix constructed from vertices are positive:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Z_{a_{1}} Z_{a_{2}} Z_{a_{3}}\right\rangle>0 \text { for } a_{1}<a_{2}<a_{3} . \tag{2.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $k \times n$ matrix which satisfies this positivity is called "the positive matrix $M_{+}(k, n)$ ". Then the interior of the convex polygon is given by a set of points as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y^{I}=c_{1} Z_{1}^{I}+c_{2} Z_{2}^{I}+\cdots+c_{n} Z_{n}^{I}=c_{a} Z_{a}^{I} \text { with } c_{a}>0 \tag{2.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be interpreted as an intersection of two positive space:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(c_{1}, \cdots, c_{n}\right) \subset G_{+}(1, n), \quad\left(Z_{1}, \cdots, Z_{n}\right) \subset M_{+}(3, n) . \tag{2.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be generalized to higher $m$-dimensional space as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y^{I}=c_{a} Z_{a}^{I} \text { where }\left(c_{1}, \cdots, c_{n}\right) \subset G_{+}(1, n), \quad\left(Z_{1}, \cdots, Z_{n}\right) \subset M_{+}(1+m, n) \tag{2.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can further generalize this into the Grassmannian. We consider $(k+m)$ dimensional vectors $Z_{a}^{I}$ for $I=1, \cdots, k+m$ where we restrict $n \leq(k+m)$. And we introduce the space of $k$ dimensional planes in this $(k+m)$ dimensional space $Y \subset G(k, k+m)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{\alpha}^{I}, \alpha=1, \cdots, k, I=1, \cdots, k+m \tag{2.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider a subspace of $G(k, k+m)$ which is determined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{\alpha}^{I}=C_{\alpha a} Z_{a}^{I} \tag{2.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{\alpha a} \subset G_{+}(k, n), \quad Z_{a}^{I} \subset M_{+}(k+m, n) \tag{2.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

This space is called "the generalized tree amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}_{n, k}^{(m)}(Z)$. The case of $m=4$, this is called the tree amplituhedron.

The tree amplituhedron is defined as a generalization of the interior of the convex polygon. We can see that the polygon is the $k=1, m=2$ case and $n=k+m$ tree amplituhedron is corresponding to the positive Grassmannian. This definition is purely geometric, however, we will see that this tree amplituhedron gives tree scattering amplitudes in $\mathcal{N}=4 \mathrm{SYM}$.

Here we can define the loop amplituhedron as a generalization of the tree amplituhedron as follows. First, we consider $L$ 2-dimensional planes $\mathcal{L}_{(i)}$ in 4-dimensional space complement of $Y$. This $\mathcal{L}$ is the different linear combination of the external data $\mathcal{Z}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{(i) \alpha}^{I}=D_{a \alpha(i)} Z_{a}^{I} \tag{2.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $D$ is the positive Grassmannian $G_{+}(2, n)$. Then the full amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}_{n, k, l}$ is the space of all $Y, \mathcal{L}_{(i)}$ of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{\alpha}^{I}=C_{\alpha a} Z_{a}^{I}, \quad \mathcal{L}_{(i) \alpha}^{I}=D_{a \alpha(i)} Z_{a}^{I} \tag{2.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where all ordered minors of the matrix

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
D_{\left(i_{1}\right)}  \tag{2.1.13}\\
\vdots \\
D_{\left(i_{l}\right)} \\
C
\end{array}\right)
$$

are positive.
Next, we see the boundaries of the amplituhedron. First, we consider the simplest example: $k=1, m=2$ polygon case. In order to look at the boundaries, we consider $\langle Y i j\rangle$. When this bracket is positive for all $Y$, the line $\left(Z_{i} Z_{j}\right)$ is a boundary. In this case, we can expand $Y$ as $Y=c_{1} Z_{1}+\cdots+c_{n} Z_{n}$, then this bracket becomes as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y i j\rangle=\sum_{a=1}^{n}\left\langle Z_{a} Z_{i} Z_{j}\right\rangle . \tag{2.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the positivity of $C$ and $Z$, when $i, j$ are consecutive, all terms are positive and this bracket is manifestly positive:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y i i+1\rangle=\sum_{a=1}^{n}\left\langle Z_{a} Z_{i} Z_{i}+1\right\rangle>0 . \tag{2.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the boundaries are lines $\left(Z_{i} Z_{i+1}\right)$ and this is consistent that the boundaries of the polygon are given as consecutive lines. We can extend this to higher $k, m$ cases. For example, we consider the $k=1, m=4$ case. Similarly, as the case of the polygon, the bracket $\langle Y i j k l\rangle$ becomes as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Y Z_{i} Z_{j} Z_{k} Z_{l}\right\rangle=\sum_{a=1}^{n}\left\langle Z_{a} Z_{i} Z_{j} Z_{k} Z_{l}\right\rangle . \tag{2.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Only when $(i, j, k, l)$ is $(i, i+1, j, j+1)$, this is manifestly positive:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Y Z_{i} Z_{i+1} Z_{j} Z_{j+1}\right\rangle=\sum_{a=1}^{n}\left\langle Z_{a} Z_{i} Z_{i+1} Z_{j} Z_{j+1}\right\rangle>0 . \tag{2.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

From this, the boundaries are planes $(i, i+1, j, j+1)$. For the case of general $k$, we can see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Y_{1} \cdots Y_{k} Z_{i} Z_{i+1} Z_{j} Z_{j+1}\right\rangle=\sum_{a_{1}<\cdots<a_{k}}\left\langle c_{a_{1}} \cdots c_{a_{k}}\right\rangle\left\langle Z_{a_{1}} \cdots Z_{a_{k}} Z_{i} Z_{i+1} Z_{j} Z_{j+1}\right\rangle>0 . \tag{2.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 2.1.2 Sign flip definition

Another definition is a topological definition called "sign flip definition" [29]. The sign flip definition is a generalization of the "face-centered" description of the polytope: which is the definition of the polytope by the collection of inequalities associated with the facet of the polytope. However, in the case of the amplituhedron, in addition to the boundary inequalities, the sign flip characterization is needed. Let us consider the $m=2$ tree amplituhedron. All the co-dimension one boundaries are expressed as $\langle Y i i+1\rangle$. However, the space defined as $\langle Y i i+1\rangle>o$ does not correspond to the $m=2$ amplituhedron. For example, we consider the $k=2, m=2, n=4$ case, the amplituhedron is corresponding to the positive Grassmannian $G_{+}(2,4)$. The inequalities of the boundaries $\langle Y 12\rangle,\langle Y 23\rangle,\langle Y 34\rangle,\langle Y 14\rangle$ are positive, however, from the Plucker relations we can see that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y 13\rangle\langle Y 24\rangle=\langle Y 12\rangle\langle Y 34\rangle+\langle Y 23\rangle\langle Y 14\rangle>0 . \tag{2.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can not fix the signs of $\langle Y 13\rangle,\langle Y 24\rangle$ from the boundary inequalities. The signs of both $\langle Y 13\rangle,\langle Y 24\rangle$ are negative in the amplituhedron, then the boundary inequalities are insufficient to define the amplituhedron.

To see how to define the amplituhedron as a collection of the inequalities, we consider the simplest case: $m=1$ amplituhedron. We project the $k+1$ dimensional vectors $Z_{a}^{I}$ through the $k$ plane $Y$ and obtain a configuration of 1-dimensional vectors $Z_{a}^{\prime}$. Since we are projecting through $Y$, this $Y$ is mapped to the origin in this 1-dimensional space. We look at the number of times the path (12), (23), $\cdots,(n-1 n)$ jumps over the origin $Y$. This number is equivalent to the number of the sign flips in the brackets $\{\langle Y 1\rangle,\langle Y 2\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y n\rangle\}$. In the case of $n=k+1$, the signs of all $\langle Y a\rangle$ are fixed. From this case, we can see the explicit number of the sign flips for the amplituhedron: the $m=1, k$ amplituhedron has exactly $k$ sign flips. We can extends this for general $n$ :

$$
\text { is in the } m=1, k \text { amplituhedron if }
$$

the sequence $\{\langle Y 1\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y n\rangle\}$ has precisely $k$ sign flips.

Similarly we can obtain the sign flip definition for general $m$ amplituhedron [29]. The sign flip definition of the $m=2$ tree amplituhedron is
$Y$ is in the $m=2$ amplituhedron iff
$\langle Y i i+1\rangle>0$ and the sequence $\{\langle Y 12\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y 1 n\rangle\}$ has precisely $k$ sign flips.
We can define $m=4$ amplituhedron similarly as

$$
Y \text { is in the } m=4 \text { amplituhedron iff }
$$

$\langle Y i i+1 j j+1\rangle>0$ and the sequence $\{\langle Y 1234\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y 123 n\rangle\}$ has precisely $k$ sign flips.
Next, we consider the generalization of this sign flip definition to the loop amplituhedron. Here we write the loop momenta in the $l$-loop integrands as $(A B)_{\gamma}$ where $\gamma=1, \cdots, l$. The boundaries are $\left\langle(Y A B)_{\gamma} i i+1\right\rangle,\langle Y i i+1 j j+1\rangle$ and $\left\langle Y(A B)_{\gamma_{1}}(A B)_{\gamma_{2}}\right\rangle$. The sign flip definition of the loop amplituhedron is given as

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\left\langle(Y A B)_{\gamma} i i+1\right\rangle>0,\langle Y i i+1 j j+1\rangle>0,\left\langle Y(A B)_{\gamma_{1}}(A B)_{\gamma_{2}}\right\rangle>0 \\
\left\{\left(\langle Y A B)_{\gamma} 12\right\rangle, \cdots,\left\langle(Y A B)_{\gamma} 1 n\right\rangle\right\} \text { has } k+2 \text { sign flips }  \tag{2.1.20}\\
\langle Y 1234\rangle>0, \cdots,\langle Y 123 n\rangle \text { has } k \text { sign flips }
\end{array}
$$

where $\gamma$ is the number of loops.

### 2.2 Canonical form and scattering amplitudes

Here we see how to extract scattering amplitudes from the amplituhedron. Let us define a "canonical form", a differential form defined by the requirement that it has logarithmic singularities on all the boundaries of the amplituhedron. Let's consider the simplest example: triangle. We can write the interior of the triangle as $Y=Z_{1}+c_{2} Z_{2}+c_{3} Z_{3}$, the boundaries are reached as $c_{i} \rightarrow 0$. Then the canonical form is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega=\frac{d c_{1}}{c_{1}} \frac{d c_{2}}{c_{2}} . \tag{2.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{2}=\frac{\langle Y d Y d Y\rangle\langle 123\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 12\rangle\langle Y 23\rangle\langle Y 31\rangle} . \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly the canonical form for the $m=4, k=1, n=5$ amplituhedron is given as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{4}=\frac{\left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle\langle 12345\rangle^{4}}{\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 3451\rangle\langle Y 4512\rangle\langle Y 5123\rangle} . \tag{2.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we consider the convex polygon $P$. The canonical form of this polygon can be obtained by triangulating this and summing all the canonical forms for each triangle as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{P}=\sum_{i} \Omega_{1 i i+1} . \tag{2.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The canonical form can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{n, k}^{(m)}=\prod_{\alpha=1}^{k}\left\langle Y_{1} \cdots Y_{k} d^{m} Y_{\alpha}\right\rangle \Omega_{n, k}^{\prime(m)} \tag{2.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Omega_{n, k}^{\prime(m)}$ is a rational function. The scattering amplitude $\mathcal{M}_{n, k}$ is extracted from the $m=4$ canonical form $\Omega_{n, k}^{(4)}$. Here we consider the tree case. First we fix the $k+4$ dimensional external data $Z^{I}$ as 4 -dimensional kinematic part $z^{i}$ and $k$-dimensional part $\phi_{A}^{j} \cdot \eta^{A}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z^{I}=\left(z^{i}, \phi_{A}^{1} \cdot \eta^{A}, \cdots, \phi_{A}^{k} \cdot \eta^{A}\right) \tag{2.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $i, A=1, \cdots, 4$ and $\phi$ and $\eta$ are Grassmann parameters. To obtain the $\mathcal{M}_{n, k}$, we localize the form $\Omega_{n, k}^{\prime(4)}$ to $Y_{0}$ and integrate over the $\phi$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mathcal{M}_{n, k}\left(z_{a}, \eta_{a}\right)}{\mathcal{M}_{n, 0}\left(z_{a}, \eta_{a}\right)}=\int d^{4} \phi_{1} \cdots \int d^{4} \phi_{k} \Omega_{n, k}^{(4)}\left(Y_{0}, Z_{a}\right) . \tag{2.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

For example, we consider the canonical form (2.2.3),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int d^{4} \phi \frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{4}}{\left\langle Y_{0} 1234\right\rangle\left\langle Y_{0} 2345\right\rangle\left\langle Y_{0} 3451\right\rangle\left\langle Y_{0} 4512\right\rangle\left\langle Y_{0} 5123\right\rangle}  \tag{2.2.8}\\
& =\frac{\delta^{0 \mid 4}\left(\langle 1234\rangle \eta_{5}+\text { cyclic permutations }\right)}{\langle 1234\rangle\langle 2345\rangle\langle 3451\rangle\langle 4512\rangle\langle 5123\rangle} .
\end{align*}
$$

This is just the 5 -point NMHV tree amplitude. We can obtain the loop integrand from the canonical form of the loop amplituhedron similarly as

$$
\frac{\mathcal{M}_{n, k}\left(z_{a}, \eta_{a}, \mathcal{L}_{\gamma(i)}\right)}{\mathcal{M}_{n, 0}\left(z_{a}, \eta_{a}\right)}=\int d^{4} \phi_{1} \cdots \int d^{4} \phi_{k} \prod_{i=1}^{L}\left\langle\mathcal{L}_{1(i)} \mathcal{L}_{2(i)} d^{2} \mathcal{L}_{1(i)}\right\rangle\left\langle\mathcal{L}_{1(i)} \mathcal{L}_{2(i)} d^{2} \mathcal{L}_{2(i)}\right\rangle \int \Omega_{n, k}^{\prime(4)}\left(Y_{0}, Z_{a}, \mathcal{L}_{\gamma(i)}\right)
$$

### 2.3 Sign flip triangulation

In this section, we see that the sign flip pattern gives a natural triangulation of the amplituhedron. First we consider the tree $m=1, k=1$ case. From the definition of sign flips, $\{\langle Y 1\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y n\rangle\}$ has 1 sign flip. We denote the place where the sign flip takes place $j$; $\langle Y j\rangle<0$ and $\langle Y j+1\rangle>0$. Now we can expand $Y$ on some basis $\mathcal{Z}_{A}, \mathcal{Z}_{B}$ as $Y=\mathcal{Z}_{A}+x \mathcal{Z}_{B}$. In order to describe the $m=1$ cell where the sign flip occurs at $j$, it is convenient to choose $\mathcal{Z}_{A}=\mathcal{Z}_{j}, \mathcal{Z}_{B}=\mathcal{Z}_{j+1}$. From the sign flip conditions, we must have $x_{j}>0$ and conversely, every $Y$ of this form with $x>0$ will belong to this cell. Then the canonical form for this sign
flip pattern is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{j}=\frac{d x_{j}}{x_{j}} \tag{2.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the full form of $m=1 k=1$ amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega=\sum_{1 \leq j \leq n-1} \frac{d x_{j}}{x_{j}} . \tag{2.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the triangulation of the $m=1, k=1$ tree amplituhedron from sign flips. We can similarly triangulate for general $k$. The region in the $m=1, k$ amplituhedron where $\{\langle Y 1\rangle \cdots\langle Y n\rangle\}$ flips in slots $\left(j_{1}, \cdots j_{k}\right)$ is covered by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y=\left(\mathcal{Z}_{j_{1}}+x_{1} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{1}+1}\right)\left(\mathcal{Z}_{j_{2}}+x_{2} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{2}+1}\right) \cdots\left(\mathcal{Z}_{j_{k}}+x_{k} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{k}+1}\right) \quad \text { with } x_{k}>0 \tag{2.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $k$-form related to each cell is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega^{\left\{j_{1}, \cdots j_{k}\right\}}=\prod_{\alpha=1}^{k} d \log x_{\alpha}=\prod_{\alpha=1}^{k} d \log \frac{\left\langle Y \mathcal{Z}_{i_{\alpha}+1}\right\rangle}{\left\langle Y \mathcal{Z}_{i_{\alpha}}\right\rangle} \tag{2.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the full form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega=\sum_{2 \leq j_{1} \leq j_{2} \leq \cdots \leq j_{k} \leq n-1} \Omega^{\left\{j_{1}, \cdots j_{k}\right\}} . \tag{2.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The dimension of each cell is $k$ and this is the triangulation of $\mathcal{A}(m=1, k, n)$ into nonredundant cells. Similarly the $m=2$ amplituhedron can be triangulated from the sign flips. For $m=2$ case, the sequence $\{\langle Y 12\rangle,\langle Y 13\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y 1 n\rangle\}$ has $k$ sign flip in the slots $\left(j_{1}, \cdots j_{k}\right)$. Then we can expand $Y$ as
$Y=\left(+\mathcal{Z}_{1}+x_{1} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{1}}+y_{1} \mathcal{Z} j_{1}+1\right)\left(-\mathcal{Z}_{1}+x_{2} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{2}}+y_{2} \mathcal{Z} j_{2}+1\right) \cdots\left((-1)^{k} \mathcal{Z}_{1}+x_{k} \mathcal{Z}_{j_{k}}+y_{k} \mathcal{Z} j_{k}+1\right)$
with $x_{k}, y_{k}>0$. The $k$-form for each cell is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega^{\left\{j_{1}, \cdots j_{k}\right\}} & =\prod_{\alpha=1}^{k} d \log x_{\alpha} d \log y_{\alpha}=\prod_{\alpha=1}^{k} d \log \frac{\left\langle Y 1 i_{\alpha}\right\rangle}{\left\langle Y i_{\alpha} i_{\alpha}+1\right\rangle} d \log \frac{\left\langle Y 1 i_{\alpha}+1\right\rangle}{\left\langle Y i_{\alpha} i_{\alpha}+1\right\rangle} \\
& =\left[1, j_{1}, j_{1}+1 ; 1, j_{2}, j_{2}+1 ; \cdots ; 1, j_{k}, j_{k}+1\right] \tag{2.3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

where
$\left[i_{1}, i_{2}, i_{3} ; \cdots ; k_{1}, k_{2}, k_{3}\right]=\frac{\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right) \cap\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right) \cap \cdots \cap\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\rangle}{\left\langle Y i_{1} i_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y i_{2} i_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle Y i_{3} i_{1}\right\rangle \cdots\left\langle Y k_{3} k_{1}\right\rangle}$.

Then the full form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k}=\sum_{2 \leq j_{1} \leq j_{2} \leq \cdots \leq j_{k} \leq n-1}\left[1, j_{1}, j_{1}+1 ; 1, j_{2}, j_{2}+1 ; \cdots ; 1, j_{k}, j_{k}+1\right] . \tag{2.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The dimension of each cell is $2 k$ and this is the triangulation of $\mathcal{A}(m=2, k, n)$. The important case is $k=2$, it is isomorphic to the 1 -loop MHV amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}(k=0, n, m=4, l=1)$. The full canonical form of this amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}(2, n, 2)$ from sign flips is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=2} & =\sum_{2 \leq i \leq j \leq n-1}[1, i, i+1 ; 1, j, j+1] \\
& =\sum_{2 \leq i \leq j \leq n-1} \frac{\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y_{1} Y_{2}(1 i i+1) \cap(1 j j+1)\right\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 1 i\rangle\langle Y 1 i+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1\rangle\langle Y 1 j\rangle\langle Y 1 j+1\rangle\langle Y j j+1\rangle} . \tag{2.3.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Take $\left(Y_{1}, Y_{2}\right) \leftrightarrow(A, B)$, this form corresponds to the Kermit representation of 1-loop MHV integrand.

For $m=1$ and $m=2$ case, we have seen that the sign flip pattern gives us a triangulation of the amplituhedron. However, for the case of $m=4$, there isn't a relation between the triangulation and the sign flip pattern.

## Chapter 3

## The 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron

In this section, we see that it is possible to triangulate the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}(k=0, n, l=2)$ using the sign flip definition. The sign flip definition of the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \langle A B i i+1\rangle>0,\langle C D i i+1\rangle>0 \\
& \{\langle A B 12\rangle,\langle A B 13\rangle, \cdots,\langle A B 1 n\rangle\} \text { has } 2 \text { sign flip } \\
& \{\langle C D 12\rangle,\langle C D 13\rangle, \cdots,\langle C D 1 n\rangle\} \text { has } 2 \text { sign flip } \\
& \langle A B C D\rangle>0, \tag{3.0.1}
\end{align*}
$$

$(A, B)$ and $(C, D)$ are the loop momentum for each amplituhedron. From this, we can see that the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron is constructed by two 1-loop MHV amplituhedron ( $A B$ ), $(C D)$ and a further constraint $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$. The important fact is that even if we consider the general $n$-point, there is only one constraint $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$. Because of this, to obtain the canonical form we need to solve only one constraint and it is very easy rather than the $Y=C \cdot Z$ description. We construct the triangulation of the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron from the sign flip definition and compare with the BCFW.

### 3.1 Triangulation of 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron

### 3.1.1 Four point case

First we consider the simplest case, 2-loop 4-point MHV amplituhedron. From the sign flip definition (2.1.20), it is constructed from the two 1-loop 4-point MHV. The sign flip definition
of the 1-loop amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \langle A B i i+1\rangle>0 \\
& \{\langle A B 12\rangle,\langle A B 13\rangle,\langle A B 14\rangle\} \text { has } 1 \text { sign flip. } \tag{3.1.1}
\end{align*}
$$

From this, there is only 1 sign flip pattern

$$
\begin{equation*}
\{\langle A B 12\rangle,\langle A B 13\rangle,\langle A B 14\rangle\}=\{+,-,+\} \tag{3.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we can expand the loop momentum as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x_{1} Z_{2}+w_{1} Z_{3}, \quad Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y_{1} Z_{3}+z_{1} Z_{4} \tag{3.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the sign flip condition, the region of these variables are $x_{1}, w_{1}, y_{1}, z_{1}>0$. In the view of the $Y_{\alpha}=C_{\alpha a} \mathcal{Z}_{a}$ description, the $C$-matrix of this sign flip pattern is

$$
C=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0  \tag{3.1.4}\\
-1 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Boundary of this pattern is $x_{1} \rightarrow 0, w_{1} \rightarrow 0, y_{1} \rightarrow 0, z_{1} \rightarrow 0$, then the canonical form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{4}^{l=1}=\frac{d x_{1}}{x_{1}} \frac{d w_{1}}{w_{1}} \frac{d y_{1}}{y_{1}} \frac{d z_{1}}{z_{1}}=\frac{\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\langle 1234\rangle^{2}}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle} . \tag{3.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

This form corresponds to the form of the 4-point 1-loop MHV amplituhedron obtained from the $Y=C \cdot Z$ description $[11,41]$. Next we consider the 2-loop 4-point MHV amplituhedron. This is constructed from the two 1-loop amplituhedron and a constraint $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$. We can parametrize these two 1-loop amplituhedron as

$$
\begin{gather*}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x_{1} Z_{2}+w_{1} Z_{3}, \quad Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y_{1} Z_{3}+z_{1} Z_{4} \\
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{2}+w_{2} Z_{3}, \quad Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{3}+z_{2} Z_{4} \\
\quad \text { with } \quad x_{1}, w_{1}, y_{1}, z_{1}, x_{2}, w_{2}, y_{2}, z_{2}>0 \tag{3.1.6}
\end{gather*}
$$

In view of the $\mathcal{Y}=\mathcal{C} \cdot Z$ description, the $C$-matrix is

$$
C=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0  \tag{3.1.7}\\
-1 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1} \\
1 & x_{2} & w_{2} & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & y_{2} & z_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Under this parametrization, the constraint become

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A B C D\rangle=\langle 1234\rangle\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}\right)+\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)\right\}>0 . \tag{3.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

From this condition, these parameters are bounded further. Without loss of generality, we can take $y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}>0$. Then from $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}>x_{2}-\frac{\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)}{y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}}=x_{2}-a . \tag{3.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore there are 4 cases depending on the signs of $\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right),\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)$. For example, the case of $\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)>0,\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)>0$, the regions of these variables are

$$
\begin{array}{r}
x_{2}+a>x_{1}>0, \quad w_{1}>\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}, \quad y_{1}>\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}, \quad z_{1}>z_{2} \\
x_{2}>0, \quad w_{2}>0, \quad y_{2}>0, \quad z_{2}>0 . \tag{3.1.10}
\end{array}
$$

Compare with (3.1.6), the regions of these parameters are further bounded because of this constraint. Then there are 9 boundaries

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left(x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}+a, \quad x_{1} \rightarrow 0\right), \quad w_{1} \rightarrow \frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}, \quad y_{1} \rightarrow \frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}, \quad z_{1} \rightarrow z_{2} \\
x_{2} \rightarrow 0, \quad w_{2} \rightarrow 0, \quad y_{2} \rightarrow 0, \quad z_{2} \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.1.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

We can obtain the canonical form for this case. For example, the region of $x_{1}$ is $0<x_{1}<$ $x_{2}+a$, then the form for $x_{1}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-a} . \tag{3.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the canonical form for this case is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega=\frac{1}{x_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-a}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}-\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}} . \tag{3.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

There are 4 patterns depending on the signs of $\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right),\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)$. The forms related to these 4 patterns can be constructed similarly

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Omega_{1}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a} \frac{1}{x_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a} \frac{1}{x_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{1}-\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{3}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}-\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}}  \tag{3.1.14}\\
& \Omega_{4}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-\frac{x_{1}}{x_{2}} w_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-\frac{z_{1}}{z_{2}} y_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} .
\end{align*}
$$

The remaining four cases $y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}<0$ are obtained that swap $1 \leftrightarrow 2$. The sum of these 8 form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{4 \mathrm{pt}}^{l=2}=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{\left(x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+x_{2} w_{1} z_{1}+x_{1} w_{2} z_{2}\right)}{\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}\right)+\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)\right\}} \tag{3.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

To translate it into the momentum twistor, we need to solve (3.1.6) for $x_{1}, x_{2}, \cdots, z_{2}$

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{1}=-\frac{\langle A B 13\rangle}{\langle A B 23\rangle}, \quad w_{1}=\frac{\langle A B 12\rangle}{\langle A B 23\rangle}, y_{1}=\frac{\langle A B 14\rangle}{\langle A B 34\rangle}, \quad z_{1}=-\frac{\langle A B 13\rangle}{\langle A B 34\rangle} \\
x_{2}=-\frac{\langle C D 13\rangle}{\langle C D 23\rangle}, \quad w_{2}=\frac{\langle C D 12\rangle}{\langle C D 23\rangle}, y_{2}=\frac{\langle C D 14\rangle}{\langle C D 34\rangle}, \quad z_{2}=-\frac{\langle C D 13\rangle}{\langle C D 34\rangle} . \tag{3.1.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Then the full form in the momentum twistor space is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{4 \mathrm{pt}}^{l=2} & =\frac{\langle 1234\rangle^{3}\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle} \\
& \times\{\langle A B 34\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle+\langle A B 23\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle+\langle A B 14\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle+\langle A B 12\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\} \tag{3.1.17}
\end{align*}
$$

The dimension of this amplituhedron is 8 , therefore in this 4 -point case, it is just a nonredundant cell. Of cause it can be obtained from the $Y=C \cdot Z$ description directly [41] and our result is corresponding to this $Y=C \cdot Z$ result. Next we see that the higher point 2-loop MHV amplituhedron can be triangulated into the non-redundant dimension 8 cells.

### 3.1.2 Five point case

Next we consider the 5 -point amplitude. The 2-loop 5-point MHV amplituhedron is constructed from the two 1 -loop 5 -point MHV amplituhedron and a further constraint. In the 1-loop $n=5, k=2$ amplitude, there are 3 patterns of sign flips as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\{\langle A B 12\rangle,\langle A B 13\rangle,\langle A B 14\rangle,\langle A B 15\rangle\}=\{+,-,+,+\} \text { or }\{+,-,-,+\} \text { or }\{+,+,-,+\} . \tag{3.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we can parametrize for each pattern as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x_{1} Z_{2}+w_{1} Z_{3} \\
Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y_{1} Z_{3}+z_{1} Z_{4}
\end{array} \quad(2,3) \text { pattern },\left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x_{1} Z_{2}+w_{1} Z_{3} \\
Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y_{1} Z_{4}+z_{1} Z_{5}
\end{array} \quad(2,4)\right. \text { pattern, }\right. \\
& \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x_{1} Z_{3}+w_{1} Z_{4} \\
Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y_{1} Z_{4}+z_{1} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right. \text { (3,4) pattern. } \tag{3.1.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Then depending on which pattern (3.1.19) we choose, there are $3 \times 3=9$ patterns in the 2-loop amplituhedron. We can expect that the full form of the 2-loop 5-point MHV amplituhedron is obtained by the sum of these forms related to each 9 pattern. Each form can be obtained similarly as the 4 -pt case, and the explicit calculation is given in the appendix and here we will write only the results. The case of $(2,3) \times(2,3)$ is same as the 4 -pt case. The case of $(3,4) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{3434} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{\langle 1345\rangle}{\langle A B C D\rangle}\left(x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+x_{2} w_{1} z_{1}+x_{1} w_{2} z_{2}\right) \\
& =\frac{\langle 1345\rangle^{3}\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle} \\
& \times\{\langle A B 45\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle+\langle A B 34\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle+\langle A B 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle+\langle A B 13\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle\}(3 . \tag{3.1.20}
\end{align*}
$$

The case of $(2,4) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
\Omega_{2434}= & \left.\frac{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle 134 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle}\right\} \\
\times\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle^{2}\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle
\end{array}\right\}
$$

The case of $(2,3) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2334}= & \frac{\left\langle 123 A_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle 134 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 1\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle^{2}\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 33\rangle} \\
\times & \left\{\begin{aligned}
& \{A B 13\rangle\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle C D 4 A_{3}\right\rangle-\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\left\langle 234 C_{4}\right\rangle
\end{aligned}\right. \\
& \left.+\langle C D 14\rangle\left\langle 145 A_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle C D 3 A_{3}\right\rangle-\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle 1345\rangle\right\} . \tag{3.1.22}
\end{align*}
$$

The case of $(2,4) \times(2,4)$,

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
\Omega_{2424}= & \left.\frac{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle\langle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle\langle A B 55\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle}\right\} \\
\times\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle
\end{array}\right\}
$$

We use the symbols that

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{i} \equiv(A B) \cap(1 i i+1), \quad C_{k} \equiv(C D) \cap(1 k k+1) . \tag{3.1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

The remaining patterns are $(3,4) \times(2,3),(2,4) \times(2,3),(3,4) \times(2,4)$. These forms can be obtained from $\Omega_{2334}, \Omega_{2324}, \Omega_{2434}$ that swap $A B \leftrightarrow C D$. We obtain all 9 forms and we can calculate the sum of these forms

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=2 \mathrm{MHV}}=\Omega_{2323}+\Omega_{2424}+\Omega_{3434}+\Omega_{2324}+\Omega_{2334}+\Omega_{2434}+\Omega_{2423}+\Omega_{3423}+\Omega_{3424} . \tag{3.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Each form $\Omega_{i j k l}$ has spurious poles $\langle A B 13\rangle,\langle A B 14\rangle,\langle C D 13\rangle,\langle C D 14\rangle$, we can see that all of these are canceled and remain only the physical poles in the full form and this result is corresponding to the BCFW representation. From this result, we can see that the 2-loop 5 -point MHV amplituhedron is triangulated into the 9 cells related to each sign flip pattern, and these cells are 8 -dimensional cells $G_{+}(4,4)$.

In the case of the BCFW, each cell of the 2-loop 5-point MHV amplitude has also the spurious poles not only like $\langle A B 13\rangle,\langle A B 14\rangle,\langle C D 13\rangle,\langle C D 14\rangle$, but also more complicate poles
from taking the forward limit. Therefore this triangulation has a different structure compared with the BCFW triangulation.

### 3.1.3 n-point case

Next we consider the general n-pt case. First we consider the 1-loop n-point MHV amplituhedron. There are $\frac{1}{2}(n-3)(n-2)$ sign flip patterns from the way to chose $i, j$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
i, j=2,3, \cdots, n-1, \quad i<j \tag{3.1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

When sign flip occurs at $i, j$ slots, we can parametrize the loop momentum as

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{A}=Z_{1}+x Z_{i}+w Z_{i+1}, Z_{B}=-Z_{1}+y Z_{j}+z Z_{j+1} \tag{3.1.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the canonical form of this pattern is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{i j}=\frac{d x}{x} \frac{d w}{w} \frac{d y}{y} \frac{d z}{z} \tag{3.1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the full form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega=\sum_{\substack{i, j=2,3, \cdots, n-1 \\ i<j}} \Omega_{i j} \tag{3.1.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next we consider the 2 -loop $n$-point MHV amplituhedron. There are $\left[\frac{1}{2}(n-3)(n-2)\right]^{2}$ sign flip patterns in the 2-loop n-point MHV amplituhedron depending on the way to chose $i, j, k, l$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
i, j, k, l=2,3, \cdots, n-1, \quad i<j, k<l \tag{3.1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can expand as

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { i } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { i + 1 } , }  \tag{3.1.31}\\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { j } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { j + 1 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{k}+w_{2} Z_{k+1} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{l}+z_{2} Z_{l+1}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

From the constraint $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$, these parameters are bounded. The region of these parameters are depending on the other parameters and $\langle i j k l\rangle$, however, the sign of this determinant changes depending on the relation between $(i, j)$ and $(k, l)$. More precisely, the sign is depending on the order of $i, j, k, l$, if $i<j<k<l$, then $\langle i j k l\rangle>0$. Therefore we need to determine the order of $i, j, k, l$ to calculate each form. This order of $i, j, k, l$ can be
divided into 13 groups as

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
i<k<l<j \cdots(1), & i<k<j<l \cdots(2), \quad i<j<k<l \cdots(3), \quad i=k<l<j \cdots(4) \\
i=k<j=l \cdots(5), & i=k<j<l \cdots(6), \quad i<k<j=l \cdots(7), \quad i<j=k<l \cdots(8), \\
k<i=l<j \cdots(9), & k<i<l<j \cdots(10), \quad k<i<j=l \cdots(11), \quad k<i<j<l \cdots(12), \\
k<l<i<j \cdots(13) . \tag{3.1.32}
\end{array}
$$

We can compute the forms for each case in the same way as the 5-point case. The case of (1), $C$-matrix is

$$
C=\left(\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & \ldots & i & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots  \tag{3.1.33}\\
-1 & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & j & \ldots \\
1 & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & k & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots \\
-1 & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots & l & \ldots & \ldots & \ldots
\end{array}\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(i, i+1 \rightarrow x_{1}, w_{1}\right)\left(j, j+1 \rightarrow y_{1}, z_{1}\right)\left(k, k+1 \rightarrow x_{2}, w_{2}\right)\left(l, l+1 \rightarrow y_{2}, z_{2}\right), \cdots=0 \tag{3.1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

The canonical form of this case in the momentum twistor space is
$\Omega_{i j k l}^{1}=\frac{\omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}\left\langle 1 i i+1 A_{j}\right\rangle\left\langle 1 k k+1 C_{l}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 1 k\rangle\langle C D 1 k+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l\rangle\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle}$
where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}=\frac{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle+\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{k} C_{l}\right\rangle}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} . \tag{3.1.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again we use the symbols (3.1.24). The canonical forms for another case can be obtained similarly. We give all the canonical forms and the explicit calculation of the case of (1) in the appendix.

Then the full form of the 2-loop n-pt MHV amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{n \text {-pt 2-loop }}=\sum_{\substack{i, j, k, l=2,3, \cdots, n-1 \\ i<k<l<j}} \Omega_{i j k l}^{1}+\sum_{i<k<j<l} \Omega_{i j k l}^{2}+\sum_{i<j<k<l} \Omega_{i j k l}^{3}+\cdots+\sum_{k<l<i<j} \Omega_{i j k l}^{13} \tag{3.1.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly for the 5-pt case, these cells have spurious poles. However, all of these poles are canceled and remain only physical poles. We compared this result and the BCFW representation numerically and we checked that these results are corresponding up to at least 22-pt.

From this results, we can see that the 2-loop n-pt MHV amplituhedron is triangulated into the $\left[\frac{1}{2}(n-3)(n-2)\right]^{2} 8$-dimension cells and this triangulation is obtained directly from the geometry.

### 3.2 More 2-loop Objects

### 3.2.1 Log of the 2-loop MHV Amplitude

In this section we consider the log of the 2-loop MHV amplitude. The expansion of the amplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}=1+g A_{1}+g^{2} A_{2}+g^{3} A_{3}+\cdots . \tag{3.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the expansion of the logarithm of the amplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{S}=\log \mathcal{A}=g S_{1}+g^{2} S_{2}+g^{3} S_{3}+\cdots \tag{3.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $S_{L}$ is a sum of $A_{L}$ and products of lower-loop amplitude,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{1}=A_{1}, \quad S_{2}=A_{2}-\frac{1}{2} A_{1}^{2}, \quad S_{3}=A_{3}-A_{2} A_{1}+\frac{1}{3} A_{1}^{3}, \quad \cdots, \tag{3.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore the first non-trivial part is the 2-loop log amplitude. The 2-loop log amplitude can be expressed simply as a non-planar cyclic sum of the double pentagon diagram because of the simple relation between the square of the 1-loop pentagon diagram and the 2-loop double pentagon diagram [42]. The 1-loop pentagon diagram is

and the 1-loop MHV amplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{1-\text { loop }}=\sum_{i<j}\left\{{ }^{j}\right. \tag{3.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The relation between this pentagon diagram and the double pentagon diagram is

where the double pentagon diagram is given as


The left side is just $\left(\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{1-\text { loop }}\right)^{2}$ and the right side contains not only the planar diagrams $i<j<k<l$ but also the non-planar diagrams; for example, $i<k<j<l$. From (3.2.3), the $\log$ of the 2-loop amplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
-[\log \mathcal{A}]_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{2-\text { loop }}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{1-\text { loop }}\right)^{2}-\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{2-\text { loop }} . \tag{3.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that the sum of all non-planar double pentagon diagrams times minus sign gives us the log of the 2-loop amplitude [42]

$$
\begin{equation*}
[\log \mathcal{A}]_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{2-\mathrm{loop}}=-\sum_{i<k<j<l<i} Q_{i j k l} \tag{3.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

For example, the log of the 4 -pt amplitude is

$$
\begin{align*}
& {[\log \mathcal{A}]_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{2-\text { loop, } 4-\mathrm{pt}}=-Q_{1324} } \\
= & \frac{\langle 1234\rangle^{3}(\langle A B 13\rangle\langle C D 24\rangle+\langle A B 24\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle)}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle} . \tag{3.2.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Next we consider the $\log$ of the amplitude from the geometrical view. First we consider the region of the log of the amplitude. In the case of the 2-loop MHV, the definition of the
amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z, \quad i=1,2 \tag{3.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle D_{(1)} D_{(2)}\right\rangle>0 . \tag{3.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider another case: the square of the 1-loop MHV amplituhedron. This is defined similarly

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z, \quad i=1,2 . \tag{3.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, this has no positivity condition. From (3.2.8), the region of the minus $\log$ of the amplitude is $\left\langle D_{(1)} D_{(2)}\right\rangle<0$. This pattern can be extended to all higher loop [41]. Then the question is that is it possible to obtain the log of the 2-loop MHV amplitude from the geometry

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z, \quad i=1,2, \quad \text { and } \quad\left\langle D_{(1)} D_{(2)}\right\rangle<0 \tag{3.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the canonical form of this geometry? In this section we construct the canonical form of this space (3.2.14) and see that it is corresponding to the log of the 2-loop MHV amplitude. To obtain the canonical form, we use the sign flip definition of this geometry

$$
\begin{align*}
& \langle A B i i+1\rangle>0,\langle C D i i+1\rangle>0 \\
& \{\langle A B 12\rangle,\langle A B 13\rangle, \cdots,\langle A B 1 n\rangle\} \text { has } 2 \text { sign flip } \\
& \{\langle C D 12\rangle,\langle C D 13\rangle, \cdots,\langle C D 1 n\rangle\} \text { has } 2 \text { sign flip } \\
& \langle A B C D\rangle<0 \tag{3.2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

and call this geometry "2-loop MHV log amplituhedron". From this definition, we can see that the 2-loop n-point MHV log amplituhedron is constructed from the two 1-loop MHV amplituhedron and a negative constraint $\langle A B C D\rangle<0$. Then there are $\left[\frac{1}{2}(n-3)(n-2)\right]^{2}$ sign flip patterns in the 2-loop n-point MHV log amplituhedron depending on the way to chose $i, j, k, l$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
i, j, k, l=2,3, \cdots, n-1, \quad i<j, k<l . \tag{3.2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can expand the loop momentum $\left(Z_{A}, Z_{B}\right),\left(Z_{C}, Z_{D}\right)$ as (3.1.31) and the order of $i, j, k, l$ is divided into 13 groups as (3.1.32). Once we get the order of $i, j, k, l$, then we can calculate the canonical form similarly. For example, the canonical form for the case of (1) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ]=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} \cdots d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{-1}{\left(a z_{2}-b w_{1}-c x_{1}-d w_{2}+e y_{2}\right)} \times \omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ] \tag{3.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ] & =x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& +y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle+x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle \\
& +y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle \\
& +w_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle \tag{3.2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
a= & x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle+w_{1} w_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle \\
& +x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k l+1 j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& +x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i k l+1 j\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle i k+1 l+1 j\rangle \\
& +w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle i k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k l+1 j\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
b= & x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& +y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
c= & x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle \\
& +y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle \\
d= & w_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle+w_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle \\
e= & x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 k l\rangle+w_{2} x_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle+w_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle+w_{1} w_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle+x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k l j\rangle \\
& +x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k l j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l j+1\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i k l j\rangle \\
& +x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i k l j+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle i k+1 l j\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle i k+1 l j+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k l j\rangle \\
& +w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k l j+1\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l j+1\rangle . \quad(3.2 .19) \tag{3.2.19}
\end{align*}
$$

We can calculate all forms for each pattern and the explicit form is written in the appendix. Then the full form of the 2-loop n-pt MHV log amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega\left[\log \left[\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{n-\text {-pt 2-loop }}\right]\right]=\sum_{\substack{i, j, k, l,=2,3, \ldots, n-1 \\ i<k<l<j}} \Omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ]+\sum_{i<k<j<l} \Omega_{i j k l}^{2}[\log ]+\cdots+\sum_{k<l<i<j} \Omega_{i j k l}^{13}[\log ] . \tag{3.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we can compare with this result and the non-planar sum of the double pentagon diagrams (3.2.9) and we checked that these results are corresponding up to at least 22-pt.

In the case of the 2-loop MHV amplitude, we can obtain the log of the amplitude from the canonical form on the well-defined space as (3.2.14). However, the important point is that in the case of the 3 -loop or higher loop, we can not define the log of the amplitude as a canonical form on the well-defined space. This means that the 2-loop MHV case is a special that we can define the log of the amplitude geometrically

### 3.2.2 Square of the Amplituhedron and Positivity

Next we consider the decomposition of the square of the 1-loop MHV amplituhedron. From (3.2.13), the square of the 1-loop MHV amplituhedron is decomposed into the amplituhedron and the $\log$ amplituhedron

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z\right) & =\left(\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z, \quad\left\langle D_{(1)} D_{(2)}\right\rangle>0\right) \\
& +\quad\left(\mathcal{L}_{i}=D_{i} \cdot Z, \quad\left\langle D_{(1)} D_{(2)}\right\rangle<0\right) \tag{3.2.21}
\end{align*}
$$

for $i=1,2$. We can see this decomposition directly from the canonical form. For example, the 4 -point case, the canonical form of the amplitude and log of the amplitude is

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\Omega[\mathcal{A}]=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{x_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} z_{1}+w_{1} y_{2}+w_{2} y_{1}}{\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)+\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right)\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\right\}} \\
\Omega[\log \mathcal{A}]=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{-\left(x_{1} z_{1}+x_{2} z_{2}+w_{1} y_{1}+w_{2} y_{2}\right)}{\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)+\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right)\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\right\}} . \tag{3.2.22}
\end{array}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega[\mathcal{A}]+\Omega[\log \mathcal{A}]=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} . \tag{3.2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is just the canonical form of the square of the 1-loop MHV amplituhedron (3.2.13). We can be confirmed that it holds for general $n$-point case from the explicit representation of the canonical form.

The interesting feature is that the numerator of the canonical form of the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron is the positive part of $\langle A B C D\rangle$ and the numerator of the log amplitude is the negative part. For example, the 4 -pt case,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A B C D\rangle=\langle 1234\rangle\left\{x_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} z_{1}+w_{1} y_{2}+w_{2} y_{1}-\left(x_{1} z_{1}+x_{2} z_{2}+w_{1} y_{1}+w_{2} y_{2}\right)\right\} . \tag{3.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the condition that $(A, B)$ and $(C, D)$ are the 1-loop MHV amplituhedron, we can see
that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle 1234\rangle, x_{1}, x_{2}, w_{1}, w_{2}, \cdots, z_{2}>0 \tag{3.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\langle A B C D\rangle$ is decomposed to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A B C D\rangle=A^{+}+A^{-} \tag{3.2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
A^{+}=\langle 1234\rangle\left(x_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} z_{1}+w_{1} y_{2}+w_{2} y_{1}\right), \quad A^{-}=-\langle 1234\rangle\left(x_{1} z_{1}+x_{2} z_{2}+w_{1} y_{1}+w_{2} y_{2}\right) \tag{3.2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $A^{+}$is positive, $A^{-}$is negative. From (3.2.22),

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega[\mathcal{A}] & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{A^{+}}{\langle A B C D\rangle}  \tag{3.2.28}\\
\Omega[\log \mathcal{A}] & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{A^{-}}{\langle A B C D\rangle}, \tag{3.2.29}
\end{align*}
$$

we use the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle 1234\rangle\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)+\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right)\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\right\}=\langle A B C D\rangle \tag{3.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the $n$-point forms of the amplitude and the log amplitude, we can see that this holds for general $n$-point case. $\langle A B C D\rangle$ is decomposed into the positive and negative parts even for the $n$-pt case. For example, the pattern (1) for (3.1.32),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A B C D\rangle=a z_{2}-b w_{1}-c x_{1}-d w_{2}+e y_{2} \tag{3.2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a, b, c, d, e$ are defined as (3.2.19) and these are positive. Then the positive and negative parts is

$$
\begin{equation*}
A^{+}=a z_{2}+e y_{2}, \quad A^{-}=-\left(b w_{1}+c x_{1}+d w_{2}\right) \tag{3.2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

The canonical form of the 2-loop amplitude and the log of the amplitude for this pattern (1) is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\mathcal{A}] & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{A^{+}}{\langle A B C D\rangle}  \tag{3.2.33}\\
\Omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log \mathcal{A}] & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{A^{-}}{\langle A B C D\rangle} \tag{3.2.34}
\end{align*}
$$

and we can see that this holds for all another patterns of (3.1.32). From this result and
$A^{+}>0$, the form of the $n$-pt 2-loop MHV amplituhedron is positive. Addition to this, in the form of the $\log$ amplitude, $A^{-}<0$ and $\langle A B C D\rangle<0$. Then the log of the amplitude is also positive. The positivity of the canonical form is related to the existence of a "dual amplituhedron" [20]. Then this is the another prove of the positivity of the canonical form directly.

## Chapter 4

## The 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron

In the previous section, we have seen that the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron is triangulated by using the sign flip triangulation. In this section, we consider the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron. Since there is no isomorphism between this 1-loop NMHV and the $m=2$ amplituhedron, then we cannot use the same way with the MHV case. However, from the sign flip definition, we can see that the 1 -loop $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ amplituhedron is constructed from the $m=2, k+$ 2 amplituhedron and $m=2, k$ amplituhedron which intersecting with the $\mathrm{N}^{k}$ MHV tree amplituhedron. This means that even higher $k$ case, the amplituhedron is constructed from the two $m=2$ amplituhedra and once we obtain this representation, we can triangulate by using the sign flip triangulation. In section 4.1, we see how to construct the 1-loop MNHV amplituhedron as a product of two $m=2$ amplituhedra and construct explicitly. In section 4.2, we introduce the super-local representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.

### 4.1 6-2 Representation of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron

### 4.1.1 Amplituhedron as a Product of $m=2$ Amplituhedra

The sign flip definition of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\langle(Y A B) i i+1\rangle>0,\langle Y i i+1 j j+1\rangle>0 \\
\{\langle(Y A B) 12\rangle, \cdots,\langle(Y A B) 1 n\rangle\} \text { has } 3 \text { sign flips } \\
\{\langle Y 1234\rangle,\langle Y 1235\rangle, \cdots,\langle Y 123 n\rangle\} \text { has } 1 \text { sign flips. } \tag{4.1.1}
\end{array}
$$

From this definition, we can see that this 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron is written as a product of two $m=2$ amplituhedra; $m=2, k=3$ amplituhedron $(Y A B)$ and the polygon which is the intersection of the plane $(Y A B)$ and the tree amplituhedron given by the convex hull of the external data for $k=1$. This means that the form of this 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron is expressed as " 6 -form $\times 2$-form", where the 6 -form is the canonical form for ( $Y A B$ ) amplituhedron, and the 2 -form is the one for the intersecting polygon. The important point is that in this representation, there is no difference between $Y$ and $A B$ variables. From this, we write the $(Y A B)$ plane as $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ plane. Usually, we write this form as " 4 -form $\times 4$-form" from the BCFW: one 4 -form is depended on $Y$ (which is corresponding to the R-invariant), another 4 -form for the loop momentum $(A B)$. Then this 6 -form $\times 2$-form representation has a completely different structure than the BCFW. We call this representation as " $6-2$ representation".

Next, we see that what vertices make this "intersecting polygon". In the case of 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron, we need to consider the intersection of a 2-plane $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ and a 4dimensional polytope with vertices $Z_{i}$. The boundaries of this pentagon are determined by the intersection of the plane $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ and the facets of the cyclic polytope: $\langle i i+1 j j+1\rangle$. A vertex comes from the intersection of the plane and a triplet who share three indices of two boundaries. For example, the triplet which is determined as a intersection of two boundaries $(i i+1 j j+1),(i i+1 j+1 j+2)$ is $(i i+1 j+1)$. Explicitly, the boundary of this polytope $(i i+1 j j+1)$ intersects with a 2 -plane with a line

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right) \cap(i i+1 j j+1) & =\left(Z_{i} Z_{i+1}\right)\langle Y j j+1\rangle+\left(Z_{i+1} Z_{j}\right)\langle Y j+1 i\rangle \\
& +\left(Z_{j} Z_{j+1}\right)\langle Y i i+1\rangle+\left(Z_{j+1} Z_{i}\right)\langle Y i+1 j\rangle . \tag{4.1.2}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\langle Y i j\rangle=\left\langle Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3} i j\right\rangle$. The triplet $(i i+1 j)$ intersects with a 2-plane with a point

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right) \cap(i i+1 j)=Z_{i}\langle Y i+1 j\rangle+Z_{i+1}\langle Y j i\rangle+Z_{j}\langle Y i i+1\rangle . \tag{4.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

This point is in the interior of this polytope if all of these coefficients are positive,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y i i+1\rangle,\langle Y i+1 j\rangle,\langle Y j i\rangle>0 . \tag{4.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

This means that the vertices of the intersecting polygon satisfy this condition. From this, the vertices of the intersecting polygon are written as triplets ( $a, b, c$ ) which satisfy (4.1.4). The case of more general dimension is discussed in [19].

Once we obtain the shape of the intersecting polygon, we can write the canonical form of it.

For example, the 2-form of the triangle whose vertices are $\{\hat{i}, \hat{j}, \hat{k}\}=\left\{\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right),\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right),\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{3-\mathrm{pt}\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right)\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)}^{m=2, k=1}=\frac{\left\langle y d^{2} y\right\rangle\langle\hat{i} \hat{j} \hat{k}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{i} \hat{j}\rangle\langle y \hat{j} \hat{k}\rangle\langle y \hat{k} \hat{i}\rangle} \tag{4.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y$ is a point on the $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ plane inside this triangle. Next, we rewrite this 6-2 representation into the $(Y A B)$ space. In $(Y A B)$ space, the line $(\hat{i} \hat{j})$ on the plane $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ is just the intersection of two boundaries of the cyclic polytope $\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right) \cap\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)$. Similarly $(\hat{i} \hat{j} \hat{k})$ is just the intersection of three boundaries $\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right) \cap\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right) \cap\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)$. From this, the explicit relations of brackets in the $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right), y$ space and in the $(Y A B)$ space are

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3} i j\right\rangle & \rightarrow\langle Y A B i j\rangle, \\
\langle y \hat{i} \hat{j}\rangle & \rightarrow\left\langle Y A B\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right) \cap\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle Y A B i_{1} i_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y i_{3} j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right\rangle+\left\langle Y A B i_{2} i_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle Y i_{1} j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right\rangle \\
& +\left\langle Y A B i_{3} i_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y i_{2} j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right\rangle, \\
\langle\hat{i} \hat{j} \hat{k}\rangle & \rightarrow\left\langle(Y A B) \cap\left(i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right) \cap\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right) \cap\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\rangle \\
& =\left|\begin{array}{lll}
\left\langle Y A i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right\rangle & \left\langle Y A\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)\right\rangle & \left\langle Y A\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\rangle \\
\left\langle A B i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right\rangle & \left\langle A B\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)\right\rangle & \left\langle A B\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\rangle \\
\left\langle B Y i_{1} i_{2} i_{3}\right\rangle & \left\langle B Y\left(j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right)\right\rangle & \left\langle B Y\left(k_{1} k_{2} k_{3}\right)\right\rangle
\end{array}\right| \tag{4.1.6}
\end{align*}
$$

And the measure changes as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle y d^{2} y\right\rangle \rightarrow\left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} B\right\rangle \tag{4.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can generalize this to the 1-loop $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}_{n, k}^{1 \text {-loop }}$. From the sign flip definition, we can see that $\mathcal{A}_{n, k}^{1 \text {-loop }}$ is constructed from the $m=2, k+2$ amplituhedron and $m=2, k$ amplituhedron which intersecting with the $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ tree amplituhedron. Then the form of $\mathcal{A}_{n, k}^{1 \text {-loop }}$ becomes $2(k+2) \times 2 k$ form and we call this as $2(k+2)$ - $2 k$ representation.


Figure 4.1: 5-pt intersecting pentagon

### 4.1.2 Five point case

In this section, we construct the 6-2 representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron explicitly. First we consider the simplest example; 5 -pt case. In this simplest case, the $m=2, k=3$ amplituhedron is just the $G_{+}(3,5)$ positive Grassmannian $\mathcal{A}_{5 \text {-pt }}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2,3,4,5)$. Next, we consider the shape of the intersecting polygon. The edges of this pentagon come from the boundaries of the cyclic polytope

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1234),(2345),(3451),(4512),(5123) . \tag{4.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The triplets who share three indices of two boundaries are

$$
\begin{equation*}
(123),(234),(345),(451),(512),(124),(134),(135),(235),(245),(135) . \tag{4.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

A triplet $(a, b, c)$ becomes a vertex of this polygon if the condition (4.1.4) is satisfied. From this, we can see that only $(123),(234),(345),(451),(512)$ are vertices of the polygon and the shape of this polygon is Figure 4.1. We denote these vertices as $\{(512),(123),(234),(345),(451)\}=$ $\{\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \hat{3}, \hat{4}, \hat{5}\}$ and $y$ as the point on this polygon. From this, we can see that the intersecting polygon is this pentagon and this is $m=2, k=1, n=5$ amplituhedron where the vertices are $\{\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \hat{3}, \hat{4}, \hat{5}\}$. From this, the $6-2$ representation of the 5 -pt 1 -loop NMHV amplitude is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=1, k=1}(1,2,3,4,5)=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2,3,4,5) \times \mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \hat{,}, \hat{4}, \hat{5}) \tag{4.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is corresponding to the representation which is obtained from the "Momentum twistor diagram" [43]. From this 6-2 representation, we can see that the geometric factor of the measure of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron which is discussed in [43] is the intersecting
$m=2, k=1$ amplituhedron.
Next, we consider the canonical form of this $6-2$ representation of the 5 -pt case. In this case, $\mathcal{A}_{5 \text {-pt }}^{m=2, k=3}$ is just the $G_{+}(3,5)$ positive Grassmannian and the 6 -form is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{6}^{5 \mathrm{pt}}=\frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{2}\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{2} Y_{3}\right\rangle}{\langle Y 12\rangle\langle Y 23\rangle\langle Y 34\rangle\langle Y 45\rangle\langle Y 51\rangle} . \tag{4.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

To obtain the canonical form of the intersecting pentagon, we need to triangulate this. The form of this pentagon is written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{2}^{5 p t}=\left\langle y d^{2} y\right\rangle \times\left(\frac{\langle\hat{1} \hat{2} \hat{2}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{1} \hat{2}\rangle\langle y \hat{2} \hat{3}\rangle\langle y \hat{1} \hat{3}\rangle}+\frac{\langle\hat{1} \hat{3} \hat{4}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{1} \hat{3}\rangle\langle y \hat{3} \hat{4}\rangle\langle y \hat{4} \hat{5}\rangle}+\frac{\langle\hat{1} \hat{4} \hat{5}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{1} \hat{4}\rangle\langle y \hat{4} \hat{5}\rangle\langle y \hat{1} \hat{5}\rangle}\right) . \tag{4.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the full form of the 5 -pt 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega^{5 \mathrm{pt}}=\Omega_{6}^{5 \mathrm{pt}} \times \Omega_{2}^{5 \mathrm{pt}} \tag{4.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can transform into ( $Y A B$ ) space by using (4.1.6) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega^{5 \mathrm{pt}} & =\frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{2}\left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} B\right\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 51\rangle} \\
& \times\left\{\frac{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle 12345\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 1235\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y A B 13\rangle\langle Y A B(125) \cap(234)\rangle}\right. \\
& +\frac{\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 15\rangle\langle 12345\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 3451\rangle\langle Y 4512\rangle\langle Y A B 14\rangle\langle Y A B(512) \cap(345)\rangle} \\
& \left.+\frac{\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 25\rangle^{2}\langle 12345\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 3451\rangle\langle Y A B 13\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B(125) \cap(234)\rangle}\right\} . \tag{4.1.14}
\end{align*}
$$

This is corresponding to the 5 -pt 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.
Of cause we can triangulate the pentagon in another way. If we triangulate this pentagon by the lines of $(\hat{5} \hat{2})$, ( $\hat{5} \hat{3})$, the form of this pentagon is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{2}^{5 \mathrm{pt}}=\left\langle y d^{2} y\right\rangle \times\left(\frac{\langle\hat{5} \hat{1} \hat{2}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{5} \hat{1}\rangle\langle y \hat{1} \hat{2}\rangle\langle y \hat{5} \hat{2}\rangle}+\frac{\langle\hat{5} \hat{2} \hat{3}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{5} \hat{2}\rangle\langle y \hat{2} \hat{3}\rangle\langle y \hat{5} \hat{3}\rangle}+\frac{\langle\hat{5} \hat{3} \hat{3}\rangle^{2}}{\langle y \hat{5} \hat{3}\rangle\langle y \hat{3} \hat{4}\rangle\langle y \hat{5} \hat{4}\rangle}\right) \tag{4.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can rewrite this form into the $(Y A B)$ space as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega^{5 \mathrm{pt}} & =\left\langle Y A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle \\
& \times\left\{\frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{4}}{\langle Y 1245\rangle\langle Y 1235\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B(145) \cap(123)\rangle}\right. \\
& +\frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{4}}{\langle Y 1345\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 15\rangle\langle Y A B(145) \cap(234)\rangle} \\
& \left.+\frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{4}\langle Y A B 14\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 15\rangle\langle Y A B(145) \cap(123)\rangle\langle Y A B(145) \cap(234)\rangle}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This is just the BCFW representation of the 5-pt 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron. From this, the BCFW triangulation for this 5 -pt case is interpreted as one of the triangulation of the intersecting pentagon. However, this simple relation between the sign flip triangulation and the BCFW holds only in the 5-pt case.

### 4.1.3 Six point case

Next we consider 6-pt case. The triplets who share three indices of two boundaries are

$$
\begin{align*}
& (1,2,3),(1,2,4),(1,2,5),(1,3,4),(2,3,4),(2,3,5),(2,3,6),(3,4,5),(3,4,6) \\
& (4,5,6),(5,6,1),(6,1,2),(2,4,5),(3,5,6),(2,5,6),(4,6,1),(1,3,6),(1,4,5) . \tag{4.1.16}
\end{align*}
$$

First we consider the ( $Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}$ ) amplituhedron. From the sign flip definition, this is decomposed into four cells as

|  | $\langle Y 12\rangle$ | $\langle Y 13\rangle$ | $\langle Y 14\rangle$ | $\langle Y 15\rangle$ | $\langle Y 16\rangle$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mathcal{A}_{234}^{6}$ | + | - | + | - | - |
| $\mathcal{A}_{235}^{6}$ | + | - | + | + | - |
| $\mathcal{A}_{245}^{6}$ | + | - | - | + | - |
| $\mathcal{A}_{345}^{6}$ | + | + | - | + | - |

Let's consider $\mathcal{A}_{234}$ cell. From the signs of brackets $\langle Y i i+1\rangle,\langle Y 1 i\rangle$, we can see that $(1,2,3),(1,2,5),(2,3,4),(3,4,5),(1,4,5)$ can become the vertices of the polygon. However, some other vertices

$$
\begin{equation*}
(2,3,6),(3,4,6),(4,5,6),(6,1,2),(2,5,6),(4,6,1) \tag{4.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 4.2: polygons for each cell
can become vertices depending on the signs of other brackets

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y 26\rangle,\langle Y 36\rangle,\langle Y 46\rangle . \tag{4.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

The possible patterns of the signs of these brackets are

| $\langle Y 26\rangle$ | $\langle Y 36\rangle$ | $\langle Y 46\rangle$ | vertices | pentagon |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| + | + | - | $(6,1,2),(4,5,6)$ | $(1)$ |
| + | - | - | $(6,1,2),(4,5,6)$ |  |
| - | + | - | $(2,3,6),(2,5,6),(4,5,6)$ | $(2)$ |
| + | - | + | $(3,4,6),(4,5,6),(6,1,2)$ | $(3)$ |

For each sign patterns, there are different polygons as Figure 4.2. This means that we need to further triangulate these sign flip cells by other brackets to obtain the intersecting polygon. Similarly we can obtain the pentagons for other cells. The explicit results and calculations
are written in appendix B. 1 and the final result is

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=1, k=1} & =\mathcal{A}_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2,3,4,5,6) \times \mathcal{A}_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \hat{3}, \hat{4}, \hat{5}, \hat{6}) \\
& +\sum_{1 \leq i \leq 6} \mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(i+2, i+3, \cdots, i-1, i) \times \mathcal{A}_{3-\mathrm{pt}((i i+1 i+2),(i i+2 i+3),(i i+2 i-1))}^{m=2} . \tag{4.1.19}
\end{align*}
$$

This is the 6-2 representation of the 6-pt 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.
To obtain the canonical form, we need to triangulate the $m=2, k=3$ amplituhedron. We can triangulate all $m=2$ amplituhedron by using the "sign flip triangulation" [29], and we can construct the canonical form. The canonical form of the $m=2$ amplituhedron from the sign flip triangulation is given as (2.3.9). From this, we can obtain the canonical form of the 6 - 2 representation of the 6 -pt case as

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2} & =\Omega_{6-\mathrm{pt}(61)}^{m=2, k=3} \times \sum_{2 \leq i \leq 5} \Omega_{3-\mathrm{pt}(1)(i)(i+1)}^{m=2, k=1} \\
& +\sum_{1 \leq i \leq 6} \Omega_{5-\mathrm{pt}(i i+2)}^{m=2, k=3} \times \Omega_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+2 i-1)(i i+2 i+1)(i i+2 i+3)}^{m=2, k=1} \tag{4.1.20}
\end{align*}
$$

here we use the notation that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}(a b)}^{m=2, k}=\sum_{b+1 \leq i_{1}<\cdots<i_{k} \leq a-1}\left[b, i_{1}, i_{1}+1 ; \cdots ; b, i_{k}, i_{k}+1\right] \tag{4.1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\Omega_{3-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}$ is given as (4.1.5). We can transform into ( $Y A B$ ) space similarly by using (4.1.6). We write the explicit representation in this $(Y A B)$ space in appendix C. We have checked that the sum of all of these cells are corresponding to the BCFW representation of the 6 -pt 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.

### 4.1.4 n-point case

To go to the higher point case, we need to further triangulate sign flip cells of the ( $Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}$ ) amplituhedron. Let consider the 234 cell in 7 -pt. The 234 cell means that the cell which has 3 sign flips at $\langle Y 12\rangle,\langle Y 13\rangle,\langle Y 14\rangle$. To obtain the vertices of the intersecting polygon, we need to triangulate by the signs of other brackets as $\{(24),(25),(26),(27),(35),(36), \cdots,(57)\}$ where (ij) means $\langle Y i j\rangle$. The number of possible patterns is 10 and there are polygons for each cell. When we go to a higher point, the number of the cells and the intersecting polygons for each cell become very large, then it is difficult to obtain the 6-2 representation for the general
$n$-pt amplituhedron from this way. However, we have already seen that the 6-2 representation of the 6 -pt case is simple. This simplicity holds for not only 6 -pt but also higher point case. For example, from the straightforward calculation, the 7 -pt and 8-pt results are

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}_{7-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=1, k=1} & =\mathcal{A}_{7-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2,3,4,5,6,7) \times \mathcal{A}_{7-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \hat{3}, \hat{4}, \hat{,}, \hat{6}, \hat{7}) \\
& +\sum_{1 \leq i \leq 7} \sum_{2 \leq k \leq 3} \mathcal{A}_{(8-k) \text {-pt }}^{m=2, k=3}(i+k, i+k+1, \cdots, i)  \tag{4.1.22}\\
& \times\left(\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k+k i-1)(i i+k i+k-1)(i i+k i+1)}^{m=2}+\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+1)(i i+k i+k+1)}^{m=2, k=1}\right) \\
\mathcal{A}_{8-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=1, k=1}= & \mathcal{A}_{8-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2, \cdots, 8) \times \mathcal{A}_{8-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \cdots, \hat{8}) \\
& +\sum_{1 \leq i \leq 8} \sum_{2 \leq k \leq 4}\left(\mathcal{A}_{(9-k)-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(i+k, i+k+1, \cdots, i)-\mathcal{A}_{(k+1)-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(i, i+1, \cdots, i+k)\right) \\
& \times\left(\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+k-1)(i i+k i+1)}^{m=2, k=1}+\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+1)(i i+k i+k+1)}^{m=2, k=1}\right) \tag{4.1.23}
\end{align*}
$$

From these results, we can suppose that the 6-2 representation of the general $n$-pt amplituhedron is written as

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{l=1, k=1} & =\mathcal{A}_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2, \cdots, n) \times \mathcal{A}_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}(\hat{1}, \hat{2}, \cdots, \hat{n}) \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \sum_{1 \leq i \leq n} \sum_{2 \leq k \leq n-2}\left(\mathcal{A}_{(n-k+1)-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(i+k, i+k+1, \cdots, i)-\mathcal{A}_{(k+1)-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(i, i+1, \cdots, i+k)\right) \\
& \left.\times\left(\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k=1}^{m=2}=1\right)(i i+k i+k-1)(i i+k i+1)+\mathcal{A}_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+1)(i i+k i+k+1)}^{m=2, k=1}\right) . \tag{4.1.24}
\end{align*}
$$

To check this formula is true, we need to obtain the canonical form of this 6-2 representation and compare it with another expression like BCFW. We can similarly construct the canonical form by using the sign flip triangulation and the result is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2} & =\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}(n 1)}^{m=2, k=3} \times \sum_{2 \leq i \leq n-1} \Omega_{3-\mathrm{pt}(1)(i)(i+1)}^{m=2, k=1} \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \sum_{1 \leq i \leq n} \sum_{2 \leq k \leq n-2}\left(\Omega_{(n-k+1)-\mathrm{pt}(i i+k)}^{m=2, k=3}-\Omega_{(k+1)-\mathrm{pt}(i+k i)}^{m=2, k=3}\right)  \tag{4.1.25}\\
& \times\left(\Omega_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+k-1)(i i+k i+1)}^{m=2,1}+\Omega_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+1)(i i+k i+k+1)}^{m=2, k=1}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

We have checked that this formula is consistent with the BCFW up to at least 22-pt numerically. This canonical form is expressed as a product of two canonical forms of the $m=2$ amplituhedra. This is a completely different structure than the BCFW triangulation, which
is written as a product of R-invariant and 1-loop MHV Kermit [9].

### 4.2 Super-Local Form and Positivity

In this section, we see the "super-local" representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplitude. There is the local representation of the loop amplitudes [42]. For example, the local representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron is

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{NMHV}}^{1-1 \text { loop }}= & \sum_{i<j<k<i} \frac{\left\langle Y A B(i-1 i i+1) \cap \Sigma_{i j k}\right\rangle}{\langle Y A B X\rangle\langle Y A B i-1 i\rangle\langle Y A B i i+1\rangle\langle Y A B j j+1\rangle\langle Y A B k k+1\rangle} \\
+ & \sum_{i<j<i} \frac{\times i, j, j+1, k, k+1]}{\langle Y A B X\rangle\langle Y A B i-1 i\rangle\langle Y A B i i+1\rangle\langle Y A B j-1 j\rangle\langle Y A B j j+1\rangle} \\
& \times \mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{NMHV}}^{\text {tree }}(j, j+1, \cdots, i-1, i)
\end{align*}
$$

where $X$ is a reference bi-twistor and

$$
\begin{align*}
{[i, j, k, l, m] } & =\frac{\langle i j k l m\rangle^{4}}{\langle Y i j k l\rangle\langle Y j k l m\rangle\langle Y k l m i\rangle\langle Y l m i j\rangle\langle Y m i j k\rangle} \\
\Sigma_{i j k} & =\frac{1}{2}[(j j+1(i k k+1) \cap X)-(k k+1(i j j+1) \cap X)] . \tag{4.2.2}
\end{align*}
$$

This expression involves the R-invariants which have spurious poles as a function of the external particle momenta. This means that the only poles involving the loop integration variables are local.

Here we obtain another representation: "Super-local representation". The super-local means both of external poles and internal poles are local. From the 6-2 representation, the 1loop NMHV amplituhedron is constructed from $m=2, k=3$ and $m=2, k=1$ amplituhedra. We know the local triangulation for a $m=2, k=1$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{n \mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}=\sum_{i} \frac{\langle 12 i\rangle\langle i-1 i i+1\rangle}{\langle y 12\rangle\langle y i-1 i\rangle\langle y i i+1\rangle} . \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for a $m=2, k=3$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{n \mathrm{pt}(n 1)}^{m=2, k=3}=\sum_{j_{1}, j_{2}, j_{3}} \frac{\left\langle 12 j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle Y\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle}{\langle Y 12\rangle\left\langle Y j_{1}-1 j_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle Y j_{1} j_{1}+1\right\rangle \cdots\left\langle Y j_{3} j_{3}+1\right\rangle}, \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we use the notation that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle Y\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle \equiv\left\langle Y\left(j_{1}-1 j_{1} j_{1}+1\right) \cap\left(j_{2}-1 j_{2} j_{2}+1\right) \cap\left(j_{3}-1 j_{3} j_{3}+1\right)\right\rangle \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

From this, we can rewrite a term $\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3} \times \Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=1}$ of (4.1.25) as local. Next, we consider $\Omega_{(n-k+1)-\operatorname{pt}(i i+k)}^{m=2, k=3}, \Omega_{(k+1)-\operatorname{pt}(i+k i)}^{m=2, k=3}$. We can also rewrite this term by using (4.2.4). The important point is that these terms have spurious pole $\langle Y i i+k\rangle$ for $\Omega_{(n-k+1) \text {-pt }(i i+k)}^{m=2, k=3}$ and $\langle Y i+k i\rangle$ for $\Omega_{(k+1)-\operatorname{pt}(i+k i)}^{m=2, k=3}$. The last remain part is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i+k i-1)(i i+k i+k-1)(i i+k i+1)}^{m=2, k=1}+\Omega_{3 \mathrm{pt}(i i+k i-1)(i i+k i+1)(i i+k i+k+1)}^{m=2, k=1} . \tag{4.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the canonical form of the $m=2, k=1, n=4$ amplituhedron whose vertices are $\{(i i+k i-1),(i i+k i+k-1),(i i+k i+1),(i i+k i+k+1)\}$. The local representation of this form in the $\left(Y_{1} Y_{2} Y_{3}\right)$ space is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\langle Y i i+k\rangle\langle i, i+k, i-1, i+k+1, i+1\rangle\langle i, i+k, i+k+1, i+1, i+k-1\rangle}{\langle Y i-1 i i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k-1\rangle} \\
+ & \frac{\langle Y i i+k\rangle\langle i, i+k, i-1, i+k+1, i+k-1\rangle\langle i, i+k, i+1, i+k-1, i-1\rangle}{\langle Y i-1 i i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k-1\rangle\langle Y i-1 i i+k-1 i+k\rangle} . \tag{4.2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

This has only physical poles and the important point is that this has a $\langle Y i i+k\rangle$ on its denominator and because of this, the spurious pole is canceled. This means that all terms of (4.1.25) are local. The explicit super-local form of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron in
$(Y A B)$ space is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{n-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2} & =\sum_{\substack{2 \leq j_{1}<j_{2} \\
<j_{3} \leq n-1}} \frac{\left\langle 12 j_{1} j_{2} j_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\left\langle Y A B j_{1}-1 j_{1}\right\rangle\left\langle j_{1} j_{1}+1\right\rangle \cdots\left\langle Y A B j_{3} j_{3}+1\right\rangle} \\
& \times \sum_{1 \leq i \leq n} \frac{\langle Y A B(n 12) \cap(123) \cap(i-1 i i+1)\rangle\langle i-2 i-1 i i+1 i+2\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y n 123\rangle\langle Y i-2 i-1 i i+1\rangle\langle Y i-1 i i+1 i+2\rangle} \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \sum_{\substack{2 \leq k \leq n-2 \\
1 \leq i \leq n}}\left(\sum_{\substack{i+k+1 \leq j_{1}<j_{2} \\
<j_{3} \leq i-1}} \frac{\left\langle i+k j_{1} j_{2} j_{3} i\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle}{\langle Y A B i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y A B i+k+1 i+k+2\rangle \cdots\langle Y A B i-1 i\rangle}\right. \\
& \left.+\sum_{\substack{i+1 \leq j_{1}<j_{2} \\
<j_{3} \leq i+k-1}} \frac{\left\langle i j_{1} j_{2} j_{3} i+k\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle}{\langle Y A B+1\rangle\langle Y A B i+1 i+2\rangle \cdots\langle Y A B i+k-1 i+k\rangle}\right) \\
& \times\left(\frac{\langle i-1, i, i+1, i+k, i+k+1\rangle\langle i, i+1, i+k-1, i+k, i+k+1\rangle}{\langle Y i-1 i i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k-1\rangle}\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{\langle i-1, i, i+k-1, i+k, i+k+1\rangle\langle i-1, i, i+1, i+k-1, i+k\rangle}{\langle Y i-1 i i+k i+k+1\rangle\langle Y i i+1 i+k i+k-1\rangle\langle Y i-1 i i+k-1 i+k\rangle}\right) . \tag{4.2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

We write the explicit form of this super-local form of the 6 -pt case in appendix C.
Next, we consider the positivity of this form. This super-local form has only physical pole $\langle Y A B i i+1\rangle,\langle Y i i+1 j j+1\rangle$. From the definition of the amplituhedron, all of these physical poles are positive. We can prove that $\left\langle Y A B\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle>0$ for $j_{1}<j_{2}<j_{3}$ from the positivity properties of the determinants of minors as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle a b c\left(j_{1}\right) \cap\left(j_{2}\right) \cap\left(j_{3}\right)\right\rangle>0 \quad \text { for } a<b<c, j_{1}<j_{2}<j_{3} . \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The detail is discussed in [12]. From these properties and the positivity of the all the ordered minors $\langle i j k l m\rangle>0$ for $i<j<k<l<m$, we can see that the super-local representation (4.2.8) is positive.

## Chapter 5

## Conclusion

We have investigated the triangulation of the 2-loop MHV amplituhedron and 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron. The crucial point is that the sign flip definition gives a new interpretation of the loop amplituhedron. From this definition, we can see that the higher loop MHV amplituhedron is decomposed into the one loop MHV amplituhedron and conditions of the positivity among condition, the $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ loop amplituhedron is constructed as an intersection of the two lower-dimensional amplituhedra. By using this fact, we have obtained the triangulation of these amplituhedra.

First, we have obtained the canonical form of the n-point 2-loop MHV amplituhedron from this triangulation. We found that the representation of the 2-loop MHV integrand from this canonical form looks completely different from the BCFW representation. This is a new feature that starts from the 2-loop level. We have also obtained the $n$-point 2-loop MHV log integrand from the geometry that constructed from the two 1-loop MHV amplituhedron and the "negativity".

Next, we have obtained an explicit representation of the n-point 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron as a product of two lower-dimensional $m=2$ amplituhedra. From this, we triangulated this 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron explicitly and obtained the canonical form. We also have obtained the new representation of the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron: super-local representation, which means both external poles and internal poles are local. This super-local representation makes the positivity of this 1 -loop NMHV amplituhedron manifest term-by-term. The positivity of the canonical form is related to the existence of a "dual amplituhedron". Then this will give clues to the existence of the dual amplituhedron for the 1-loop NMHV amplituhedron.

There are many open questions for future studies. The natural generalization is to go to the higher loop MHV amplituhedron. From the sign flip definition, the general $L$-loop MHV amplituhedron is decomposed into $L$ 1-loop MHV amplituhedra and $\frac{1}{2} L(L-1)$ positivity conditions. We can apply the same method of the 2-loop case for this general $L$-loop, however, it is difficult to find the region of the parameters which satisfy all positivity conditions. Once we triangulate the higher loop MHV amplituhedron, we can obtain the canonical form and this form will give us a new structure of the integrand.

Generalization of the 6-2 representation to the higher $k$ one-loop amplituhedron is also interesting. From the sign flip definition, the 1-loop $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ amplituhedron is constructed from the $m=2, k+2$ amplituhedron and $m=2, k$ amplituhedron which intersecting with the $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ tree amplituhedron. This means that even higher $k$ case, the amplituhedron is constructed from the two $m=2$ amplituhedra. Once we obtain this representation, we can obtain the canonical form of this 1-loop $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ amplituhedron by using the sign flip triangulation of the $m=2$ amplituhedron.

These generalizations lead us to consider the $L$-loop $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ amplituhedron. From the sign flip definition, there are $L m=2, k+2$ amplituhedron $\left(Y A_{1} B_{1}\right), \cdots,\left(Y A_{L} B_{L}\right)$ and $m=2, k$ amplituhedron which intersecting with the $\mathrm{N}^{k} \mathrm{MHV}$ tree amplituhedron. In addition to this, there is the further condition for the positivity $\left\langle Y A_{i} B_{i} A_{j} B_{j}\right\rangle>0$. We hope to revisit these problems in the future.

## Acknowledgements

First of all, I would like to thank my supervisors, Prof. Yoshihisa Kitazawa for his scientific guidance and advice. I would also like to thank Naoto Kan, Hiroyuki Kitamoto and Cameron Langer for collaborations. I am also grateful to my colleagues, Toshihiro Aoki, Daiki Ueda, Hikaru Ohta, Naoto Kan, Takuya Hasegawa and Sumito Yokoo for discussions.

As well as them, I would like to thank Prof. Jaroslav Trnka for his guidance for the study about the "amplituhedron". And I also would like to thank Prof. Song He for his advice. I am also grateful to the University of California, Davis and Institute of Theoretical Physics, Chinese Academy of Sciences for hospitality during my stay. Finally, I would like to thank my family and especially my wife for their support and encouragement.

## Appendix A

## Explicit Calculation of the 2-loop MHV Amplituhedron

## A. 1 5-point case

The case of $(2,3) \times(2,3)$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 2 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{2}+w_{2} Z_{3} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{3}+z_{2} Z_{4}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

Therefore it is same as 4-pt case. $C$-matrix is (3.1.7) and the form is (3.1.17). Next the case of $(3,4) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 5 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{3}+w_{2} Z_{4} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{4}+z_{2} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A B C D\rangle=\langle 1345\rangle\left\{\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left(y_{1} z_{2}-y_{2} z_{1}\right)+\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\left(w_{1} x_{2}-w_{2} x_{1}\right)\right\} \tag{A.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is almost same as the case of $(2,3) \times(2,3)$. The only difference is $\langle 1345\rangle$, thus there are 8 forms and the sum of these forms is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{3434} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{\langle 1345\rangle}{\langle A B C D\rangle}\left(x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+x_{2} w_{1} z_{1}+x_{1} w_{2} z_{2}\right) \\
& =\frac{\langle 1345\rangle^{3}\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle} \\
& \times\{\langle A B 45\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle+\langle A B 34\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle+\langle A B 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle+\langle A B 13\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle\} \tag{A.1.2}
\end{align*}
$$

The case of $(2,3) \times(2,4)$, two 1-loop amplituhedron are parametrized as

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 2 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{2}+w_{2} Z_{3} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{4}+z_{2} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

In view of the $Y=C \cdot Z$ description, the $C$-matrix is

$$
C=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0 & 0  \tag{A.1.3}\\
-1 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1} & 0 \\
1 & x_{2} & w_{2} & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{2} & z_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

The constraint is

$$
\begin{align*}
\langle A B C D\rangle & =\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right)\left\{y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1234\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1245\rangle\right\} \\
& +\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\left\{\left(y_{2}-z_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle-z_{1} z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle\right\} \\
& +\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right) z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1345\rangle \tag{A.1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

From $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{1} & >x_{2}-\frac{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\left\{\left(y_{2}-z_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle-z_{1} z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle\right\}+\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right) z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1345\rangle}{y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1234\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1245\rangle} \\
& =x_{2}-a \tag{A.1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

The region of $x_{1}$ is depends on the sign of $a$. When $a<0$,
$x_{1}>x_{2}-a, w_{2}<w_{1}-\frac{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\left\{\left(y_{2}-z_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle-z_{1} z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle\right\}}{z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1345\rangle}=w_{1}-b$

Similarly, the region of $w_{1}$ is depends on the sign of $b$. When $b<0$, there are 2 cases that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
w_{1}<w_{2}-b, \quad \text { and } x_{2}<\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}, \quad z_{1}>\frac{y_{2}\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle}{\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle}=c  \tag{A.1.7}\\
\text { or } \\
w_{1}<w_{2}-b, \quad \text { and } x_{2}>\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}, \quad z_{1}<c
\end{array}\right.
$$

There are 8 cases depending on the signs of $a, b$. The forms for these cases can be obtained similarly as 4 -point case,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Omega_{1}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}+b}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-c} \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a} \frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}+b}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-c}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{3}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}-w_{1}-b} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-c}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{4}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}+a} \frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}-w_{1}-b} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-c} \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{5}=\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right) \frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}+b} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-c} \frac{1}{z_{2}}  \tag{A.1.8}\\
& \Omega_{6}=\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right)\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}+b} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-c}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{7}=\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right) \frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{w_{2}}-\frac{1}{w_{2}-w_{1}-b}\right) \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-c}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}} \\
& \Omega_{8}=\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}-a}\right)\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{w_{2}}-\frac{1}{w_{2}-w_{1}-b}\right) \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-c} \frac{1}{z_{2}}
\end{align*}
$$

For

$$
\begin{align*}
a & =\frac{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\left\{\left(y_{2}-z_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle-z_{1} z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle\right\}+\left(w_{1}-w_{2}\right) z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1345\rangle}{y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1234\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1245\rangle} \\
b & =\frac{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\left\{\left(y_{2}-z_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle-z_{1} z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle\right\}}{z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1345\rangle} \\
c & =\frac{y_{2}\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 1235\rangle}{\langle 1234\rangle+z_{2}\langle 2345\rangle} \tag{A.1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Then sum of these 8 forms is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2324} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{1}{\langle A B C D\rangle}\left\{\langle 1234\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2} y_{2}+x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+x_{2} w_{1} z_{1}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\langle 1235\rangle x_{1} z_{2}\left(w_{2}+y_{1}\right)+z_{1} z_{2}\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right\} \tag{A.1.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Rewrite it into the momentum twistor,

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
\Omega_{2324}= & \frac{\left\langle 123 A_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle^{2}\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle} \\
\{\times\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle\}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

We use these symbols

$$
\begin{align*}
&(A B) \cap(1 i i+1)=-Z_{1}\langle i i+1 A B\rangle-Z_{i}\langle i+1 A B 1\rangle-Z_{i+1}\langle A B 1 i\rangle  \tag{A.1.12}\\
& \equiv A_{i} \\
&(C D) \cap(1 i i+1)=-Z_{1}\langle i i+1 C D\rangle-Z_{i}\langle i+1 C D 1\rangle-Z_{i+1}\langle C D 1 i\rangle
\end{align*} \equiv_{i}
$$

The case of $(2,4) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 2 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 5 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{3}+w_{2} Z_{4} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{4}+z_{2} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

$C$-matrix is

$$
\begin{gather*}
C=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1} \\
1 & 0 & x_{2} & w_{2} & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{2} & z_{2}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{A.1.13}\\
\begin{aligned}
\langle A B C D\rangle & =\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1} w_{2}+\langle 1235\rangle x_{1} x_{2}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1} w_{2}\right) \\
& +\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(x_{2}-w_{1}\right)-\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2}\right\} \\
& +\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle x_{1} x_{2}
\end{aligned}
\end{gather*}
$$

From $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
z_{2} & >z_{1}-\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(x_{2}-w_{1}\right)-\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2}\right\}+\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle x_{1} x_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1234\rangle} \\
& =z_{1}-a \tag{A.1.15}
\end{align*}
$$

The region of $z_{2}$ is depends on the sign of $a$. When $a<0$,
$z_{2}>z_{1}-a$, and $y_{2}<y_{1}-\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(x_{2}-w_{1}\right)-\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2}\right\}}{x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1234\rangle}=y_{1}-b$

Similarly, the region of $y_{2}$ is depends on the sign of $b$. When $b<0$, there are 2 cases that

$$
y_{2}<y_{1}-b, \quad \text { and }\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
z_{1}>\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}, & x_{2}<\frac{w_{1}\langle 1345\rangle+x_{1}\langle 1245\rangle}{x_{1}\langle 2345\rangle+\langle 1345\rangle}=c  \tag{A.1.17}\\
\text { or } \\
z_{1}<\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}, & x_{2}>c
\end{array}\right.
$$

There are 8 cases depending on the signs of $a, b$. Then the forms for these cases are

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Omega_{1}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{2}}-\frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+b}\right) \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a} \\
& \Omega_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-c} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{2}}-\frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+b}\right)\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a} \\
& \Omega_{3}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-c} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-b} \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a} \\
& \Omega_{4}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+b}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a} \\
& \Omega_{5}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+b}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a}\right) \\
& \Omega_{6}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-c} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+b}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a}  \tag{A.1.18}\\
& \Omega_{7}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-c} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-b}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a}\right) \\
& \Omega_{8}=\frac{1}{x_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-b}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+a}
\end{align*}
$$

For

$$
\begin{align*}
a & =\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(x_{2}-w_{1}\right)-\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2}\right\}+\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle x_{1} x_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1234\rangle} \\
b & =\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(x_{2}-w_{1}\right)-\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2}\right\}}{x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1234\rangle} \\
c & =\frac{w_{1}\langle 1345\rangle+x_{1}\langle 1245\rangle}{x_{1}\langle 2345\rangle+\langle 1345\rangle} \tag{A.1.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Then sum of these 8 forms is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2434} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{1}{\langle A B C D\rangle}\left\{\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{1} w_{2} z_{2}+w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\langle 1235\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2} z_{2}+x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\right)+\langle 1234\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\right\} \tag{A.1.20}
\end{align*}
$$

In the momentum twistor,

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2434}= & \left.\frac{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle 134 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle} \begin{array}{c}
\langle A B\rangle \\
\times\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle^{2}\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle
\end{array}\right\} \\
\times & \left\{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle(\langle A B 45\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle+\langle A B 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle)\right.  \tag{A.1.21}\\
& \left.-\left\langle 345 A_{2}\right\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle+\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

The case of $(2,3) \times(3,4)$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 2 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{3}+w_{2} Z_{4} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{4}+z_{2} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

$C$-matrix is

$$
\begin{gather*}
C=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1} & 0 \\
1 & 0 & x_{2} & w_{2} & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{2} & z_{2}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{A.1.22}\\
\langle A B C D\rangle=\left(y_{1} w_{2}-z_{1} x_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1345\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
 \tag{A.1.23}\\
+z_{2}\left(z_{1}+w_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}\right)+x_{1}\left(y_{1}+x_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1235\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle y_{2}\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

In this case, from $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$,
$y_{1} w_{2}-z_{1} x_{2}>-\frac{z_{2}\left(z_{1}+w_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}\right)+x_{1}\left(y_{1}+x_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1235\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle y_{2}\right)}{\langle 1345\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} z_{2}}=-a$

However, from $x_{1}, x_{2}, w_{1}, w_{2}, y_{1}, y_{2}, z_{1}, z_{2}>0, a>0$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{1}<\frac{w_{2} y_{1}}{x_{2}}+\frac{a}{x_{2}} \tag{A.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the form is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2334} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{w_{2} y_{1}}{x_{2}}-\frac{a}{x_{2}}}\right) \\
& =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} d w_{1} d w_{2} d y_{1} d y_{2} d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{1}{\langle A B C D\rangle}\left\{w_{2} y_{1}\left(\langle 1345\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} z_{2}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+z_{2}\left(z_{1}+w_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}\right)+x_{1}\left(y_{1}+x_{2}\right)\left(\langle 1235\rangle z_{2}+\langle 1234\rangle y_{2}\right)\right\} \quad \text { (A.1.26) } \tag{A.1.26}
\end{align*}
$$

We can write it in the momentum twistor space,

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
\Omega_{2334}= & \left.\frac{\left\langle 123 A_{3}\right\rangle\left\langle 134 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\left\langleA B 1 2 \left\langle\langle A B 13\rangle^{2}\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle A B 34\rangle\right.\right.}\right\} \\
\times\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle^{2}\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 34\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle \tag{A.1.27}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

The case of $(2,4) \times(2,4)$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array} { l } 
{ Z _ { A } = Z _ { 1 } + x _ { 1 } Z _ { 2 } + w _ { 1 } Z _ { 3 } } \\
{ Z _ { B } = - Z _ { 1 } + y _ { 1 } Z _ { 4 } + z _ { 1 } Z _ { 5 } }
\end{array} \quad \left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{C}=Z_{1}+x_{2} Z_{2}+w_{2} Z_{3} \\
Z_{D}=-Z_{1}+y_{2} Z_{4}+z_{2} Z_{5}
\end{array}\right.\right.
$$

$C$-matrix is

$$
\begin{align*}
& C=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & x_{1} & w_{1} & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{1} & z_{1} \\
1 & x_{2} & w_{2} & 0 & 0 \\
-1 & 0 & 0 & y_{2} & z_{2}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{A.1.28}\\
& \langle A B C D\rangle=\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle+\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1235\rangle \\
& +\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)+\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

(A.1.29)

When $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)>0$, from $\langle A B C D\rangle$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{2}>y_{1}-a \tag{A.1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

For

$$
\begin{align*}
a & =\frac{\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1235\rangle}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle} \\
& +\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)+\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right.}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle} \tag{A.1.31}
\end{align*}
$$

The region of $y_{2}$ is depends on the sign of $a$. When $a<0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
y_{2}>y_{1}-a, z_{2} & <z_{1}-\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)+\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right\}}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1235\rangle} \\
& =z_{1}-b \tag{A.1.32}
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly, the region of $z_{2}$ is depends on the sign of $b$. When $b<0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{2}<z_{1}-b \text { and } x_{2}<x_{1}-\frac{\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)}{\langle 1245\rangle}=x_{1}-c \tag{A.1.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

When $c<0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}<x_{1}-c \text { and } w_{2}<w_{1}-\frac{\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)}{\langle 1345\rangle}=w_{1}-d \tag{A.1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

From $w_{2}>0,\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0$, then $d>0$ and there are 8 cases depending on the signs of a,b,c.
$\Omega_{1}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+a} \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+c}\right)$
$\Omega_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+a}$
$\times \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+b}\right)$
$\Omega_{3}=\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c} \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+a} \frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}-b}\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1}} z_{1}}\right)$
$\Omega_{4}=\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c}\right)\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-y_{1}+a}$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \times \frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}-b}\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1}} z_{1}}\right) \\
\Omega_{5} & =\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c}\right) \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d} \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-a}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+b} \\
\Omega_{6} & =\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c}\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{\left.x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1} x_{1}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-a}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}}}\right. \\
& \times \frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}} \frac{1}{z_{2}-z_{1}+b} \\
\Omega_{7} & =\frac{1}{x_{1}-\frac{w_{1}}{w_{2}} x_{2}} \frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c} \frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d} \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-a}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}} \\
& \times\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}-b}\right)\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1}} z_{1}}\right) \\
\Omega_{8} & =\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c}\right)\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-\frac{w_{2}}{w_{1}} x_{1}}\right)\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-w_{2}-d}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{1}}-\frac{1}{y_{1}-y_{2}-a}\right) \frac{1}{y_{2}} \\
& \times\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-z_{2}-b}\right)\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{\left.z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1} z_{1}}\right)}\right. \tag{A.1.35}
\end{align*}
$$

For

$$
\begin{align*}
a & =\frac{\left(z_{2}-z_{1}\right)\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1235\rangle}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle} \\
& +\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)+\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right.}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1234\rangle} \\
b & =\frac{\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)\left\{\langle 1245\rangle\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)+\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\right\}}{\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)\langle 1235\rangle} \\
c & =\frac{\langle 1345\rangle\left(w_{2}-w_{1}\right)+\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)}{\langle 1245\rangle} \\
d & =\frac{\langle 2345\rangle\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)}{\langle 1345\rangle} \tag{A.1.36}
\end{align*}
$$

This is the case of $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)>0$. Next we consider the case of $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)<0$. Forms are obtained by replacement as follows.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\frac{1}{x_{1}}-\frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c}\right) & \leftrightarrow \frac{1}{x_{1}-x_{2}-c} \\
\left(\frac{1}{x_{2}}-\frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c}\right) & \leftrightarrow \frac{1}{x_{2}-x_{1}+c} \\
\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}} & \rightarrow\left(\frac{1}{z_{1}}-\frac{1}{z_{1}-\frac{y_{1}}{y_{2}} z_{2}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{1}{z_{2}}-\frac{1}{z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1}} z_{1}}\right) \rightarrow \frac{1}{z_{2}-\frac{y_{2}}{y_{1}} z_{1}} \tag{A.1.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the cases of $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)<0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)<0$ and $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)<0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)>$ 0 are obtained that swap $1 \leftrightarrow 2$ for the case of $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)>0$ and $\left(x_{1} w_{2}-x_{2} w_{1}\right)>0,\left(z_{1} y_{2}-z_{2} y_{1}\right)<0$. Then sum of these 32 forms is

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2424} & =\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} \cdots d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{1}{\langle A B C D\rangle} \\
& \times\left\{\langle 1234\rangle\left(x_{2} w_{1} y_{1}+x_{1} w_{2} y_{2}\right)+y_{2} z_{1}\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{2}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{2}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{1} w_{2}\right)\right.  \tag{A.1.38}\\
& \left.+y_{1} z_{2}\left(\langle 1345\rangle w_{1}+\langle 1245\rangle x_{1}+\langle 2345\rangle x_{2} w_{1}\right)+\langle 1235\rangle\left(x_{2} w_{1} z_{1}+x_{1} w_{2} z_{2}\right)\right\} .
\end{align*}
$$

In the momentum twistor space,

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{2424}= & \left.\frac{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\{\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 144\langle A B 15\langle\langle A B 233\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\rangle} \begin{array}{rl}
\times\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle
\end{array}\right\} \\
\times & \left\{\left\langle 123 A_{4}\right\rangle(\langle A B 12\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 45\rangle+\langle A B 15\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle\langle C D 23\rangle)\right.  \tag{A.1.39}\\
& +\left\langle 123 C_{4}\right\rangle(\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 45\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle+\langle A B 14\rangle\langle A B 23\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle) \\
& +\langle 2345\rangle(\langle A B 12\rangle\langle A B 15\rangle\langle C D 13\rangle\langle C D 14\rangle+\langle A B 13\rangle\langle A B 14\rangle\langle C D 12\rangle\langle C D 15\rangle)\}
\end{align*}
$$

The remaining patterns are $(3,4) \times(2,3),(2,4) \times(2,3),(3,4) \times(2,4)$. These forms can be obtained from $\Omega_{2334}, \Omega_{2324}, \Omega_{2434}$ that swap $A B \leftrightarrow C D$.

## A. 2 n-point case

First we consider the (1) case $i<k<l<j$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \langle A B C D\rangle= \\
& x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i k l\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle-x_{1}\left(x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle\right. \\
& +x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l j+1\rangle \\
& \left.+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle\right)+w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle \\
& -w_{2}\left(w_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle+w_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle\right)+w_{1} w_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle \\
& +w_{1} w_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle-w_{1}\left(x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle\right. \\
& \left.+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle\right)+x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 k l j\rangle \\
& +x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k l j+1\rangle+x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k l+1 j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 k+1 l j\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& +w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i k l j\rangle \\
& +x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i k l j+1\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k l+1 j\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i k+1 l j\rangle \\
& +w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i k+1 l j+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i+1 k l j\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k l j+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k l+1 j\rangle \\
& +w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 l j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& =a z_{2}-b w_{1}-c x_{1}-d w_{2}+e y_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

for

$$
\begin{aligned}
a= & x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle+w_{1} w_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle \\
& +x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k l+1 j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& +x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i k l+1 j\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i k l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle i k+1 l+1 j\rangle \\
& +w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle i k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k l+1 j\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
b= & x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& +y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \\
c= & x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle \\
& +y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle \\
d= & w_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle+w_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle \\
e= & x_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i k l\rangle+w_{2} x_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle+w_{1} x_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle+w_{1} w_{2}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle+x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k l j\rangle \\
& +x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k l j+1\rangle+w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 l j+1\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i k l j\rangle+x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i k l j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle i k+1 l j\rangle+w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle i k+1 l j+1\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k l j\rangle+w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k l j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l j\rangle+w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 l j+1\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

and $a, b, c, d, e>0$. From $\langle A B C D\rangle>0$,

$$
z_{2}>\frac{b}{a} w_{1}+\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}}{a}
$$

In the case of $c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}>0$,

$$
z_{2}>\frac{b}{a} w_{1}+\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}}{a}, \quad \text { and } \quad y_{2}<\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}}{e}
$$

Then the form of this sign pattern is

$$
\Omega_{1}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}} \frac{1}{w_{1}} \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}}\left(\frac{1}{y_{2}}-\frac{1}{y_{2}-\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}}{e}}\right) \frac{1}{z_{1}} \frac{1}{z_{2}-\left(\frac{b}{a} w_{1}+\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}}{a}\right)}
$$

Another pattern is that $c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}<0$,

$$
w_{1}<\frac{a}{b} z_{2}-\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}}{b}, \quad \text { and } y_{2}>\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}}{e}
$$

Then the form is

$$
\Omega_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1}} \frac{1}{x_{2}}\left(\frac{1}{w_{1}}-\frac{1}{w_{1}-\left(\frac{a}{b} z_{2}-\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}-e y_{2}}{b}\right)}\right) \frac{1}{w_{2}} \frac{1}{y_{1}} \frac{1}{y_{2}-\frac{c x_{1}+d w_{2}}{e}} \frac{1}{z_{1}} \frac{1}{z_{2}}
$$

The canonical form for this sign flip pattern is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\Omega_{1}+\Omega_{2}\right) d x_{1} d x_{2} \cdots d z_{1} d z_{2}=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} \cdots d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{1}{\left(a z_{2}-b w_{1}-c x_{1}-d w_{2}+e y_{2}\right)} \times \omega_{i j k l}^{1} \tag{A.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1} & =\langle 1 i k l\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{1} w_{2} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{1} w_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 k l j\rangle x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 k l j+1\rangle x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 k l+1 j\rangle x_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 k l+1 j+1\rangle x_{2} z_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 k+1 l j\rangle w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 k+1 l j+1\rangle w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle w_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i k l j\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i k l j+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle i k l+1 j\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle i k l+1 j+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i k+1 l j\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i k+1 l j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i k+1 l+1 j\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 k+1 l j\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 k+1 l j+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{1} y_{2}+\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 k+1 l+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 k l j\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i+1 k l j+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle i+1 k l+1 j\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 k l+1 j+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2} \tag{A.2.2}
\end{align*}
$$

In the momentum twistor space,
$\Omega_{i j k l}^{1}=\frac{\left\langle 1 i i+1 A_{j}\right\rangle\left\langle 1 k k+1 C_{l}\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle A B d^{2} B\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} C\right\rangle\left\langle C D d^{2} D\right\rangle}{\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B C D\rangle\langle C D 1 k\rangle\langle C D 1 k+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l\rangle\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle} \times \omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}$.
for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}=\frac{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle+\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{k} C_{l}\right\rangle}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} . \tag{A.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Another forms can be obtained similarly

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{2} & =\langle 1 i k l\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i j l\rangle x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i j l+1\rangle x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i j+1 l\rangle z_{1} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i j+1 l+1\rangle z_{1} x_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j l\rangle w_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j l+1\rangle w_{1} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l\rangle z_{1} w_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l+1\rangle z_{1} w_{1} z_{2} \tag{A.2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{3} & =\langle 1 i j k\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}+\langle 1 i j k+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}+\langle 1 i j l\rangle x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i j l+1\rangle x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i j+1 k\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 i j+1 k+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}+\langle 1 i j+1 l\rangle x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 i j+1 l+1\rangle x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i k l\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i k l+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j k\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 j k+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1}+\langle 1 i+1 j l\rangle w_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j l+1\rangle w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j+1 k\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 j+1 k+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{1}+\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l\rangle w_{1} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l+1\rangle w_{1} z_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k l\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k l+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 j k l\rangle x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 j k l+1\rangle x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 j k+1 l\rangle w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 j k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 j+1 k l\rangle x_{2} z_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 j+1 k l+1\rangle x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 j+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{2} z_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 j+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i j k l\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i j k l+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i j k+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i j k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i j+1 k l\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} y_{2}+\langle i j+1 k l+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle i j+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} y_{2}+\langle i j+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 j k l\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 j k l+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 j k+1 l\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i+1 j k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 j+1 k l\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} y_{2}+\langle i+1 j+1 k l+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 j+1 k+1 l\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i+1 j+1 k+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{1} z_{2} \tag{A.2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{4} & =\langle 1 i i+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i i+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}+\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 i l j\rangle x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i l j+1\rangle x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle x_{2} z_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle w_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}+\langle i i+1 l j\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i i+1 l j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle i i+1 l+1 j\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2} \tag{A.2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{5} & =\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle\left(w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}+w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}\right)+\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle\left(w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}+w_{2} x_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
& +\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle\left(x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\right)+\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle\left(w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
& +\langle i i+1 j j+1\rangle\left(w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}+w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\right) \tag{A.2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{6} & =\langle 1 i k j\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} z_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle 1 k j j+1\rangle x_{2} y_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 k+1 j j+1\rangle w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle i k j j+1\rangle x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle i k+1 j j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1} \\
& +\langle i+1 k j j+1\rangle w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}+\langle i+1 k+1 j j+1\rangle w_{1} w_{2} y_{2} z_{1} \tag{A.2.9}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{7} & =\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}+\langle 1 i j l\rangle\left(x_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\right)+\langle 1 i j l+1\rangle\left(x_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
& +\langle 1 i j+1 l\rangle\left(w_{2} x_{1} y_{2}+x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\right)+\langle 1 i j+1 l+1\rangle\left(w_{2} x_{1} z_{2}+x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\right)+\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle w_{2} w_{1} y_{1} \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 j l\rangle\left(w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}+w_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\right)+\langle 1 i+1 j l+1\rangle\left(w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}+w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
& +\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l\rangle\left(w_{2} w_{1} y_{2}+w_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\right)+\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l+1\rangle\left(w_{2} w_{1} z_{2}+w_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\right) \\
& +\langle 1 j j+1 l\rangle w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle 1 j j+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i j j+1 l\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2} \\
& +\langle i j j+1 l+1\rangle w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}+\langle i+1 j j+1 l\rangle w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}+\langle i+1 j j+1 l+1\rangle w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} z_{2} \tag{A.2.10}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{8}=\omega_{i j k l}^{4}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{9}=\omega_{i j k l}^{7}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{10}=\omega_{i j k l}^{2}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{11}=\omega_{i j k l}^{6}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{12}=\omega_{i j k l}^{1}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{13}=\omega_{i j k l}^{3}, \\
\left(x_{1}, w_{1}, y_{1}, z_{1}\right) \leftrightarrow\left(x_{2}, w_{2}, y_{2}, z_{2}\right),(i, j) \leftrightarrow(k, l) \tag{A.2.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

Next, we rewrite these forms in the momentum twistor space

$$
\begin{gather*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}=\frac{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle+\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{k} C_{l}\right\rangle}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} .  \tag{A.2.12}\\
\omega_{i j k l}^{2^{\prime}}=\frac{-\langle A B j j+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle+\langle C D k k+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{l} 1\right\rangle}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} \tag{A.2.13}
\end{gather*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\omega_{i j k l}^{3^{\prime}} & =\frac{1}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} \\
& \times\left\{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle-\langle A B j j+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle-\langle A B 1 i\rangle\left\langle i+1 A_{j} C_{k} C_{l}\right\rangle\right. \\
& \left.+\langle C D k k+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{l} 1\right\rangle-\langle C D l l+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} A_{j} C_{k} 1\right\rangle+\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\left\langle i A_{j} C_{k} C_{l}\right\rangle\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{4^{\prime}}= & \frac{1}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D i i+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} \\
\times & \left\{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{k} C_{l} 1\right\rangle+\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle C D 1 i\rangle\left\langle A_{j} C_{l} i i+1\right\rangle\right. \\
+ & \left.\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle C D 1 i+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle\left\langle A_{j} 1 i i+1\right\rangle+\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle C D 1 i\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\left\langle C_{l} 1 i i+1\right\rangle\right\} \\
\omega_{i j k l}^{5^{\prime}}= & \frac{1}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D i i+1\rangle\langle C D j j+1\rangle} \\
& \times\left\{\left\langle 1 i i+1 A_{j}\right\rangle(\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle C D 1 k+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle+\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle)\right. \\
& +\left\langle 1 k k+1 C_{l}\right\rangle(\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D 1 k\rangle+\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle) \\
& +\langle i i+1 j j+1\rangle(\langle A B 1 i\rangle\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle C D 1 k+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l\rangle \\
& +\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle C D 1 k\rangle\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle)\}  \tag{A.2.16}\\
\omega_{i j k l}^{6^{\prime}}= & \frac{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\langle C D j j+1\rangle}{} \\
\times & \left\{\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle\left\langle C_{k} 1 j j+1\right\rangle+\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle C D 1 l\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} 1 j j+1\right\rangle\right. \\
+ & \left.\langle A B j j+1\rangle\left(\langle C D 1 l+1\rangle\left\langle A_{i} C_{k} 1 j\right\rangle-\langle C D 1 l\rangle\left\langle A_{i} C_{k} 1 j+1\right\rangle\right)\right\} \tag{A.2.17}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{7^{\prime}} & =\frac{1}{\langle A B i i+1\rangle\langle A B j j+1\rangle\langle C D j j+1\rangle\langle C D l l+1\rangle} \\
& \times\left\{\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle C D 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B 1 i\rangle\left\langle i+1 j j+1 C_{k}\right\rangle-\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle C D 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B 1 i+1\rangle\left\langle i j j+1 C_{k}\right\rangle\right. \\
& +\langle A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle C D 1 j\rangle\langle C D k k+1\rangle\left\langle 1 j j+1 A_{i}\right\rangle+\langle A B 1 j\rangle\langle C D 1 j+1\rangle\langle A B i i+1\rangle\left\langle 1 j j+1 C_{k}\right\rangle \\
& \left.+\langle A B j j+1\rangle\left\langle 1 C_{k} C_{j} A_{i}\right\rangle\right\} \tag{A.2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{8^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{4^{\prime}}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{9^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{7^{\prime}}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{10^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{2^{\prime}}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{11^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{6^{\prime}}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{12^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{1^{\prime}}, \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{13^{\prime}}=\omega_{i j k l}^{3^{\prime}}, \\
(A B) \leftrightarrow(C D),(i, j) \leftrightarrow(k, l) \tag{A.2.19}
\end{align*}
$$

## A. 3 n-point 2-loop MHV Log Amplituhedron

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega\left[\log \left[\mathcal{A}_{\mathrm{MHV}}^{n-\mathrm{pt} 2-\mathrm{loop}}\right]\right]=\sum_{\substack{i, j, k, l=2,3, \cdots, n-1 \\ i<k<l<j}} \Omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ]+\sum_{i<k<j<l} \Omega_{i j k l}^{2}[\log ] \cdots+\sum_{k<l<i<j} \Omega_{i j k l}^{13}[\log ] \tag{A.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{i j k l}^{m}[\log ]=\frac{d x_{1} d x_{2} \cdots d z_{1} d z_{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2} z_{1} z_{2}} \frac{-1}{\left(a z_{2}-b w_{1}-c x_{1}-d w_{2}+e y_{2}\right)} \times \omega_{i j k l}^{m}[\log ] \tag{A.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ] & =x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& +y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle+z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle+x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle+x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle \\
& +w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle+w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle+y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle+y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle+y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle \\
& +z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle+w_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle+w_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle \quad \text { A.3.3) }  \tag{A.3.3}\\
\omega_{i j k l}^{2}[\log ] & =-x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle \\
& -w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle-w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle-x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 k j l\rangle \\
& -x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k j l+1\rangle-x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k j+1 l\rangle-x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k j+1 l+1\rangle-w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 k+1 j l\rangle \\
& -w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k+1 j l+1\rangle-w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 k+1 j+1 l\rangle-w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k+1 j+1 l+1\rangle \\
& -x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i k j l\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k j l+1\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i k j+1 l\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i k j+1 l+1\rangle \\
& -w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i k+1 j l\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k+1 j l+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i k+1 j+1 l\rangle \\
& -w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i k+1 j+1 l+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i+1 k j l\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k j l+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k j+1 l\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k j+1 l+1\rangle-w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 j l\rangle- \\
& -w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 j l+1\rangle-w_{1} w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i+1 k+1 j+1 l\rangle \\
& -w_{1} w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 j+1 l+1\rangle \tag{A.3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{3}[\log ]=0 \tag{A.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{4}[\log ] & =-w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 l\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 l+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle \\
& -x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i l j\rangle-x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i l j+1\rangle-x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j\rangle-x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i l+1 j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l j\rangle-w_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 l j+1\rangle-w_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j\rangle \\
& -w_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i i+1 l j\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i i+1 l j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i i+1 l+1 j\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i i+1 l+1 j+1\rangle \tag{А.3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{5}[\log ] & =-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle \\
& -x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle-x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle-w_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle-w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i i+1 j j+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i i+1 j j+1\rangle \tag{A.3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{6}[\log ] & =-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i i+1 j+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 l\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{2}\langle 1 i i+1 l+1\rangle \\
& -x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i j l\rangle-x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i j l+1\rangle-x_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i j+1 l\rangle-x_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i j+1 l+1\rangle \\
& -w_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\langle 1 i+1 j l\rangle-w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 j l+1\rangle-w_{2} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l\rangle \\
& -w_{2} z_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 i+1 j+1 l+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} y_{2}\langle i i+1 j l\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i i+1 j l+1\rangle \\
& -w_{2} x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle i i+1 j+1 l\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} z_{1} z_{2}\langle i i+1 j+1 l+1\rangle \tag{А.3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{7}[\log ] & =-x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i k j\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i k j+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} z_{1}\langle 1 i k+1 j+1\rangle \\
& -x_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i j j+1\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j\rangle-w_{1} x_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k j+1\rangle-w_{1} w_{2} y_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j\rangle \\
& -w_{1} w_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 k+1 j+1\rangle-w_{1} y_{2} z_{1}\langle 1 i+1 j j+1\rangle-x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k j j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle 1 k+1 j j+1\rangle-x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k j j+1\rangle-w_{2} x_{1} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i k+1 j j+1\rangle \\
& -w_{1} x_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k j j+1\rangle-w_{1} w_{2} y_{1} z_{2}\langle i+1 k+1 j j+1\rangle \tag{A.3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

$\left.\omega_{i j k l}^{8}[\log ]=\omega_{i j k l}^{4}[\log ], \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{9}[\log ]=\omega_{i j k l}^{7}[\log ], \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{10}[\log ]=\omega_{i j k l}^{2}[\log ], \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{11} \log \right]=\omega_{i j k l}^{6}[\log ]$,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\omega_{i j k l}^{12}[\log ]=\omega_{i j k l}^{1}[\log ], \quad \omega_{i j k l}^{13}[\log ]=0, \\
\left(x_{1}, w_{1}, y_{1}, z_{1}\right) \leftrightarrow\left(x_{2}, w_{2}, y_{2}, z_{2}\right),(i, j) \leftrightarrow(k, l) \tag{A.3.10}
\end{gather*}
$$

We can similarly write these forms in the momentum twistor language.

## Appendix B

## Explicit Calculation of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron

## B. $1 \quad 6-2$ Representation of the $6-$ pt case

The 6 -pt case, there are four sign flip cells $\mathcal{A}_{234}, \mathcal{A}_{235}, \mathcal{A}_{245}, \mathcal{A}_{345}$. We have already obtained the intersecting polygon for the $\mathcal{A}_{234}$ cell. Then we consider the remain cells in this appendix. The vertices of the polygon which intersects with $\mathcal{A}_{235}^{6}$ cell are

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1,2,3),(2,3,4),(5,6,1) \tag{B.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and there are another vertices depending on the signs of other brackets as

| (25) | (35) | (26) | (36) | (46) | vertices | pentagon |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| + | - | + | + | - | (345), (456), (612) | (4) |
| - | - | $+$ | $+$ | - |  |  |
| + | - | + | - | - |  |  |
| - | - | $+$ | - | - |  |  |
| + | - | $+$ | - | $+$ | (345), (346), (612), (461) | (5) |
| - | - | $+$ | - | $+$ |  |  |
| - | + | + | - | + | $(235),(346),(612),(356),(461)$ | (6) |
| + | - | - | + | - | (236), (345), (456), (256) | (7) |
| - | $+$ | $+$ | - | - | (235), (456), (612), (356) | (8) |


(4)

(5)

(6)


Figure B.1: Polygons for $\mathcal{A}_{235}$
where $(i j)$ is $\langle Y i j\rangle$ and the shape of the intersecting polygons are Figure B.1. Next, the vertices of the polygon which intersects with $\mathcal{A}_{245}^{6}$ cell are

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1,2,3),(4,5,6),(5,6,1) \tag{B.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and there are another vertices depending on the signs of other brackets as

(9)


(10)

(11)


Figure B.2: Polygons for $\mathcal{A}_{245}$

| (24) | (25) | (35) | (26) | (36) | vertices | pentagon |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| + | + | - | + | + | (234), (345), (612) | (9) |
| - | - | - | + | + |  |  |
| - | + | - | + | - |  |  |
| - | - | - | + | - |  |  |
| + | - | - | + | + | (124), (345), (245), (612) | (10) |
| + | - | - | + | - |  |  |
| + | - | + | + | - | (124), (235), (245), (612), (356) | (11) |
| - | - | + | + | - | (234), (235), (612), (356) | (12) |
| - | + | - | - | + | (234), (236), (345), (256) | (13) |

and the shape of the intersecting polygons are Figure B.2. The vertices of the polygon which intersects with $\mathcal{A}_{345}^{6}$ cell are

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1,3,4),(3,4,5),(4,5,6),(5,6,1),(1,3,4),(1,3,6) \tag{B.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure B.3: Polygons for $\mathcal{A}_{345}$
and there are another vertices depending on the signs of other brackets as

| $(24)$ | $(25)$ | $(26)$ | vertices | pentagon |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| - | + | + | $(234),(612)$ | $(14)$ |
| - | - | + |  |  |
| + | - | + | $(124),(612),(245)$ | $(15)$ |
| - | + | - | $(234),(236),(256)$ | $(16)$ |

and the shape of the intersecting polygons are Figure B.3. Next, we consider the 6-2 representation of this amplituhedron. First, we can see that all of these polygons are related to the basic polygon $P_{6}$ which has the six vertices (612), (123), (234), (345), (456), (561) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (1)=P_{6}-\Delta(561)(125)(145), \quad(2)=P_{6}-\Delta(561)(125)(145)-\Delta(612)(236)(256), \\
& (3)=P_{6}-\Delta(561)(125)(145)-\Delta(456)(461)(346), \quad(5)=P_{6}-\Delta(456)(461)(346), \\
& (6)=P_{6}-\Delta(345)(235)(356)-\Delta(456)(461)(346), \quad(7)=P_{6}-\Delta(612)(236)(256), \\
& (8)=P_{6}-\Delta(345)(235)(356), \quad(9)=P_{6}-\Delta(234)(124)(245),
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& (11)=P_{6}-\Delta(234)(124)(245)-\Delta(345)(235)(356), \quad(12)=P_{6}-\Delta(345)(235)(356) \\
& (13)=P_{6}-\Delta(612)(236)(256), \quad(14)=P_{6}-\Delta(123)(136)(134) \\
& (15)=P_{6}-\Delta(123)(136)(134)-\Delta(234)(124)(245) \\
& (16)=P_{6}-\Delta(123)(136)(134)-\Delta(612)(236)(256) \tag{B.1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $(i)$ is the pentagon $(i)$ and $\Delta(i)(j)(k)$ is the triangle whose vertices are $i, j, k$. From this, the $6-2$ representation of the $6-\mathrm{pt}$ case is expressed as

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2} & =\left(\mathcal{A}_{234}+\mathcal{A}_{235}+\mathcal{A}_{245}+\mathcal{A}_{345}\right) \times P_{6}+\mathcal{A}^{1} \times \Delta(612)(236)(256) \\
& +\mathcal{A}^{2} \times \Delta(123)(136)(134)+\cdots+\mathcal{A}^{6} \times \Delta(561)(125)(145) \tag{B.1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathcal{A}^{i}$ is the sum of the futher triangulated sign flip cells. For example,

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{A}^{1} & =\mathcal{A}_{234}^{\prime}+\mathcal{A}_{235}^{\prime}+\mathcal{A}_{245}^{\prime}+\mathcal{A}_{345}^{\prime} \\
\mathcal{A}_{234}^{\prime} & : \mathcal{A}_{234} \text { with }\{(26),(36),(46)\}=\{-,+,-\} \\
\mathcal{A}_{235}^{\prime} & : \mathcal{A}_{235} \text { with }\{(25),(35),(26),(46)\}=\{+,-,-,-\} \\
\mathcal{A}_{245}^{\prime} & : \mathcal{A}_{245} \text { with }\{(25),(26),(36)\}=\{+,-,+\} \\
\mathcal{A}_{345}^{\prime} & : \mathcal{A}_{345} \text { with }\{(24),(25),(26)\}=\{-,+,-\} . \tag{B.1.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Then the sign of the brackets $\langle Y A B i j\rangle$ for this $\mathcal{A}^{1}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle Y A B i i+1\rangle>0, \quad\{\langle Y A B 62\rangle,\langle Y A B 63\rangle,\langle Y A B 64\rangle,\langle Y A B 65\rangle\}=\{+,-,+,-\} \tag{B.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the sign flip condition of the 5 -pt $m=2, k=3$ amplituhedron $\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(2,3,4,5,6)$. Similarly we can see that other $\mathcal{A}^{i}$ is 5 -pt $m=2, k=3$ amplituhedron as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathcal{A}^{1}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(2,3,4,5,6), \mathcal{A}^{2}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(3,4,5,6,1), \mathcal{A}^{3}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(4,5,6,1,2) \\
& \mathcal{A}^{4}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(5,6,1,2,3), \mathcal{A}^{5}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(6,1,2,3,4), \mathcal{A}^{6}=\mathcal{A}_{5-\mathrm{pt}}^{m=2, k=3}(1,2,3,4,5) \tag{B.1.8}
\end{align*}
$$

From this, we can obtain the final result of the $6-2$ representation of the 6 -pt case (4.1.19).

## Appendix C

## Explicit Results of the 1-loop NMHV Amplituhedron

## C. 1 Canonical form of the 6-pt case

The explicit expression of the canonical of the 6 - 2 representation for the 6 -pt 1 -loop NMHV amplituhedron in the $(Y A B)$ space is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Omega_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2}=\left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} B\right\rangle \\
& \times\left(\Omega_{234}^{\prime}+\Omega_{235}^{\prime}+\Omega_{245}^{\prime}+\Omega_{345}^{\prime}\right) \times([123]+[134]+[145]+[156]) \\
&+\langle 12345\rangle^{2}\langle 12456\rangle^{2} \\
&+ \frac{\langle 13456\rangle^{2}\langle 12346\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y 1245\rangle\langle Y 1256\rangle\langle Y 4561\rangle} \\
&+ \frac{\langle 12346\rangle^{2}\langle 13456\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 3461\rangle\langle Y 2361\rangle} \\
&+ \frac{\langle 12356\rangle^{2}\langle 23456\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 2356\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 3456\rangle} \\
&+ \frac{\langle 12456\rangle^{2}\langle 12345\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 1245\rangle} \\
&+\langle 23456\rangle^{2}\langle 12356\rangle^{2}  \tag{C.1.1}\\
&\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y 2361\rangle\langle Y 2356\rangle\langle Y 1256\rangle
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\Omega_{i j k}^{\prime}=\frac{\left|\begin{array}{lll}
\langle Y A 1 i i+1\rangle & \langle Y A 1 j j+1\rangle & \langle Y A 1 k k+1\rangle  \tag{C.1.2}\\
\langle A B 1 i i+1\rangle & \langle A B 1 j j+1\rangle & \langle A B 1 k k+1\rangle \\
\langle B Y 1 i i+1\rangle & \langle B Y 1 j j+1\rangle & \langle B Y 1 k k+1\rangle
\end{array}\right|^{2}}{\langle Y A B 1 i\rangle\langle Y A B 1+1\rangle\langle Y A B i i+1\rangle\langle Y A B 1 j\rangle\langle Y A B 1 j+1\rangle\langle Y A B j j+1\rangle}\langle\langle Y A B 1 k\rangle\langle Y A B 1 k+1\rangle\langle Y A B k k+1\rangle)
$$

and

## C. 2 Super-Local Representation of the 6-pt case

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega_{6-\mathrm{pt}}^{6 \times 2}= & \left\langle Y d^{4} Y\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} A\right\rangle\left\langle Y A B d^{2} B\right\rangle \\
\times & \left(\frac{\langle 23456\rangle\langle 12345\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle}\right. \\
+ & \frac{\langle Y A B(156) \cap(2345)\rangle\langle 12346\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle} \\
+ & \frac{\langle Y A B(234) \cap(4561)\rangle\langle 12356\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle} \\
+ & \left.\frac{\langle 34561\rangle\langle 12456\rangle}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle}\right) \\
\times & \frac{\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle 12346\rangle\langle 12345\rangle}{\langle Y 6123\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle}+\frac{\langle Y A B(345) \cap(1236)\rangle\langle 23456\rangle}{\langle Y 6123\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 3456\rangle} \\
+ & \left.\frac{\langle Y A B(456) \cap(1236)\rangle\langle 34561\rangle}{\langle Y 6123\rangle\langle Y 3456\rangle\langle Y 4561\rangle}+\frac{\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle 12356\rangle\langle 45612\rangle}{\langle Y 6123\rangle\langle Y 4561\rangle\langle Y 5612\rangle}\right) \\
+ & \frac{\langle 12345\rangle^{2}\langle 12456\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y 1245\rangle\langle Y 1256\rangle\langle Y 4561\rangle} \\
+ & \frac{\langle 13456\rangle^{2}\langle 12346\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 3461\rangle\langle Y 2361\rangle} \\
+ & \frac{\langle 12346\rangle^{2}\langle 13456\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 4561\rangle\langle Y 3461\rangle\langle Y 3456\rangle}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +\frac{\langle 12356\rangle^{2}\langle 23456\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 2356\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 3456\rangle} \\
& +\frac{\langle 12456\rangle^{2}\langle 12345\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 12\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y A B 61\rangle\langle Y 1234\rangle\langle Y 2345\rangle\langle Y 1245\rangle} \\
& +\frac{\langle 23456\rangle^{2}\langle 12356\rangle^{2}}{\langle Y A B 23\rangle\langle Y A B 34\rangle\langle Y A B 45\rangle\langle Y A B 56\rangle\langle Y 2361\rangle\langle Y 2356\rangle\langle Y 1256\rangle} \tag{С.2.1}
\end{align*}
$$

## Bibliography

[1] S. Weinberg, The Quantum theory of fields. Vol. 1: Foundations. Cambridge University Press, 2005.
[2] S. J. Parke and T. R. Taylor, Gluonic Two Goes to Four, Nucl. Phys. B269 (1986) 410.
[3] S. J. Parke and T. R. Taylor, An Amplitude for n Gluon Scattering, Phys. Rev. Lett. 56 (1986) 2459.
[4] R. Britto, F. Cachazo and B. Feng, New recursion relations for tree amplitudes of gluons, Nucl. Phys. B715 (2005) 499 [hep-th/0412308].
[5] R. Britto, F. Cachazo, B. Feng and E. Witten, Direct proof of tree-level recursion relation in Yang-Mills theory, Phys. Rev. Lett. 94 (2005) 181602 [hep-th/0501052].
[6] J. M. Drummond, J. Henn, G. P. Korchemsky and E. Sokatchev, Dual superconformal symmetry of scattering amplitudes in N=4 super-Yang-Mills theory, Nucl. Phys. B828 (2010) 317 [0807.1095].
[7] J. M. Drummond, J. M. Henn and J. Plefka, Yangian symmetry of scattering amplitudes in N=4 super Yang-Mills theory, JHEP 05 (2009) 046 [0902.2987].
[8] A. Hodges, Eliminating spurious poles from gauge-theoretic amplitudes, JHEP 05 (2013) 135 [0905.1473].
[9] N. Arkani-Hamed, J. L. Bourjaily, F. Cachazo, S. Caron-Huot and J. Trnka, The All-Loop Integrand For Scattering Amplitudes in Planar N=4 SYM, JHEP 01 (2011) 041 [1008.2958].
[10] N. Arkani-Hamed, J. L. Bourjaily, F. Cachazo, A. B. Goncharov, A. Postnikov and J. Trnka, Grassmannian Geometry of Scattering Amplitudes. Cambridge University Press, 2016, 10.1017/CBO9781316091548, [1212.5605].
[11] N. Arkani-Hamed and J. Trnka, The Amplituhedron, JHEP 10 (2014) 030 [1312.2007].
[12] N. Arkani-Hamed, Y. Bai and T. Lam, Positive Geometries and Canonical Forms, JHEP 11 (2017) 039 [1703.04541].
[13] N. Arkani-Hamed, P. Benincasa and A. Postnikov, Cosmological Polytopes and the Wavefunction of the Universe, 1709.02813.
[14] N. Arkani-Hamed, Y. Bai, S. He and G. Yan, Scattering Forms and the Positive Geometry of Kinematics, Color and the Worldsheet, JHEP 05 (2018) 096 [1711.09102].
[15] P. Banerjee, A. Laddha and P. Raman, Stokes polytopes: the positive geometry for $\phi^{4}$ interactions, JHEP 08 (2019) 067 [1811.05904].
[16] G. Salvatori, 1-loop Amplitudes from the Halohedron, 1806.01842.
[17] P. Raman, The positive geometry for $\phi^{p}$ interactions, 1906.02985.
[18] M. Jagadale, N. Kalyanapuram and A. P. Balakrishnan, Accordiohedra as Positive Geometries for Generic Scalar Field Theories, 1906.12148.
[19] N. Arkani-Hamed, Y.-T. Huang and S.-H. Shao, On the Positive Geometry of Conformal Field Theory, JHEP 06 (2019) 124 [1812.07739].
[20] N. Arkani-Hamed, A. Hodges and J. Trnka, Positive Amplitudes In The Amplituhedron, JHEP 08 (2015) 030 [1412.8478].
[21] S. Franco, D. Galloni, A. Mariotti and J. Trnka, Anatomy of the Amplituhedron, JHEP 03 (2015) 128 [1408.3410].
[22] Y. Bai and S. He, The Amplituhedron from Momentum Twistor Diagrams, JHEP 02 (2015) 065 [1408.2459].
[23] T. Dennen, I. Prlina, M. Spradlin, S. Stanojevic and A. Volovich, Landau Singularities from the Amplituhedron, JHEP 06 (2017) 152 [1612.02708].
[24] Y. An, Y. Li, Z. Li and J. Rao, All-loop Mondrian Diagrammatics and 4-particle Amplituhedron, JHEP 06 (2018) 023 [1712.09994].
[25] N. Arkani-Hamed, C. Langer, A. Yelleshpur Srikant and J. Trnka, Deep Into the Amplituhedron: Amplitude Singularities at All Loops and Legs, Phys. Rev. Lett. 122 (2019) 051601 [1810.08208].
[26] C. Langer and A. Yelleshpur Srikant, All-loop cuts from the Amplituhedron, JHEP 04 (2019) 105 [1902.05951].
[27] J. Rao, 4-particle Amplituhedron at 3-loop and its Mondrian Diagrammatic Implication, JHEP 06 (2018) 038 [1712.09990].
[28] D. Damgaard, L. Ferro, T. Lukowski and M. Parisi, The Momentum Amplituhedron, JHEP 08 (2019) 042 [1905.04216].
[29] N. Arkani-Hamed, H. Thomas and J. Trnka, Unwinding the Amplituhedron in Binary, JHEP 01 (2018) 016 [1704.05069].
[30] H. Elvang and Y.-t. Huang, Scattering Amplitudes, 1308. 1697.
[31] Q. Jin and B. Feng, Recursion Relation for Boundary Contribution, JHEP 06 (2015) 018 [1412.8170].
[32] C. Anastasiou, Z. Bern, L. J. Dixon and D. A. Kosower, Planar amplitudes in maximally supersymmetric Yang-Mills theory, Phys. Rev. Lett. 91 (2003) 251602 [hep-th/0309040].
[33] Z. Bern, L. J. Dixon and V. A. Smirnov, Iteration of planar amplitudes in maximally supersymmetric Yang-Mills theory at three loops and beyond, Phys. Rev. D72 (2005) 085001 [hep-th/0505205].
[34] J. M. Drummond, G. P. Korchemsky and E. Sokatchev, Conformal properties of four-gluon planar amplitudes and Wilson loops, Nucl. Phys. B795 (2008) 385 [0707.0243].
[35] J. M. Drummond, J. Henn, G. P. Korchemsky and E. Sokatchev, On planar gluon amplitudes/Wilson loops duality, Nucl. Phys. B795 (2008) 52 [0709. 2368].
[36] D. Nguyen, M. Spradlin and A. Volovich, New Dual Conformally Invariant Off-Shell Integrals, Phys. Rev. D77 (2008) 025018 [0709.4665].
[37] L. F. Alday and J. M. Maldacena, Gluon scattering amplitudes at strong coupling, JHEP 06 (2007) 064 [0705.0303].
[38] L. F. Alday and J. Maldacena, Comments on gluon scattering amplitudes via $A d S / C F T$, JHEP 11 (2007) 068 [0710.1060].
[39] J. M. Drummond and J. M. Henn, All tree-level amplitudes in N=4 SYM, JHEP 04 (2009) 018 [0808.2475].
[40] N. Arkani-Hamed, J. L. Bourjaily, F. Cachazo, A. Hodges and J. Trnka, A Note on Polytopes for Scattering Amplitudes, JHEP 04 (2012) 081 [1012.6030].
[41] N. Arkani-Hamed and J. Trnka, Into the Amplituhedron, JHEP 12 (2014) 182 [1312.7878].
[42] N. Arkani-Hamed, J. L. Bourjaily, F. Cachazo and J. Trnka, Local Integrals for Planar Scattering Amplitudes, JHEP 06 (2012) 125 [1012.6032].
[43] Y. Bai, S. He and T. Lam, The Amplituhedron and the One-loop Grassmannian Measure, JHEP 01 (2016) 112 [1510.03553].

